

A plain, but full
EXPOSITION
OF THE
CATECHISM
OF THE
Church of *ENGLAND*.

Enjoyed to be Learned of every Child, before he be brought to be confirmed by the Bishop.

Collected out of the best Catechists
By the Right Reverend Father in God, WILLIAM
Lord Bishop of Gloucester.

Negligentia magna Parochi in docendo ad salutem necessaria, nempe symbolum, Decalogum, & Pater noster, mortalis est. Ubi passim magnus abusus est eorum, qui contenti docuisse Symbolum Latine, non explicant populo rudi mysteria fidei, præsertim Trinitatis, Incarnationis, tantopere ad salutem necessaria.

Væ Parochis, væ Episcopis, væ Prælatiis.
Eman. Sa. Aphorism, voce Parochus.

L O N D O N,

Printed for William Grantham, at the Black Bear near the little North door in St Pauls Church-yard. 1671.

A. J. B. & Co.

NEW YORK

CHURCH

ST. JAMES

NEW YORK

NEW YORK

NEW YORK

NEW YORK

NEW YORK

NEW YORK

NEW YORK

NEW YORK

P-X-1



To the Right Reverend Father in God,

GILBERT,

By Gods especial Providence,

Lord Bishop of *London*, and Dean
of His Majesties Chappel.

May it please your Lordship,

¶ That I present this work to your
view, is not for any worth I conceive in it. For it is fitted for such capacities as the Church ordained the Original which it explains. And then it cannot be expected, that I should search into those depths, that ought to be presented to so learned, so grave, and so ripe a judgement. But you are a chief and principal Father, and Propugnator of that Religion professed in the Church of *England*, which is every way consonant to the Doctrine and Discipline of the Primitive times, of which the foundations are laid down and discovered in this Catechism, in the polishing of which I have bestowed my pains: And

The Epistle Dedicatory

therefore this hath encouraged me to present my conceptions to your quick eye, and to submit them to your censure, being resolved to stand or fall, as your wisdom shall pass sentence.

Some years are passed, since these brief and plain Collections were published, and the occasion the following Epistle will speak out. With approbation, they have been received, and the whole impression sold off; So that being called upon by eminent men in the Church, to publish them again, I thought it my duty to invoke your Lordships Patronage, and that you would be my Buckler, as you have been hitherto, against any that should dare to oppose these solid and fundamental Truths, which none will be so impudent to contradict, but branded Hereticks, and hot-brain'd Phanaticks. These in great swarms as angry Wasps, buz and humm about our Hives, and that they invade not, and steal not the honey from our Bees, there cannot be any better Defensative provided, than an injunction for frequent Catechizing, without which Sermons, as now in fashion, upon Desultory Texts, will be of little use. And

The Epistle Dedicatory.

And lamentable experience hath taught us, that this is an undeniable Truth. For ever since Sermonizing hath justled out this necessary instruction *a* enjoyned on the Lords day, and every Holiday, to be done by every Rector, Vicar, and Curate, half an hour or more before evening prayer, our people have been possessed with strange errors in Religion, & hurried on by the spirit of giddinels, of faction, of rebellion. It is therefore my hearts desire, that both the Queens Injunction, the practise of the Canon, and that command of his Gracious Majesties wise and pious Grandfather, King *James*, of Blessed memory were imposed afresh, and strictly called upon to be observed, *viz.* that afternoons Lectures were converted into explanations of some necessary Rudiments of the Catechism: a custome which is yet in use in the most of the *b* reformed Churches beyond sea, and were it but for that onely, those, who bear so great affection to their practise in other things, might, methinks, cast one good look toward it. I wish, *c* saith a discreet and Learned Author, that they of the Presbyterian inclination would more listen

a Queen *Elizabeths* Injunctions 1559.
Injunct. 44.
Et Canon 59
Anno 1603.
Rubrick after Confirmation.

b Confess.
Belgica, Cap. 68.
Synod Dordr.
P. 31.

c *Hamon*
Le Strange
Alliance of
Divine offices.
Annotation 6. 4.

The Epistle Dedicatory.

listen to these their friends, and if not for Conformities, yet for Christianities sake, not suffer preaching so totally to usurp and justle out this most necessary office, that, as an Inmate, to expel the right owner. *Fas est & ab hoste doceri*, Taught they may be from those Puritans of the Church of Rome the *Jesuits*, who take it for their glory that they are the most diligent Catechists, and for to incourage the children that come to be catechized, from their Desks and Pulpits, do usually scatter their *ἀπορίσματα* among them. This is the work upon which I would advise and beseech my fellow-labourers to spend themselves, and their pains especially; and to ease their labour, and to help them onward in this good work, 'tis supposed, these observations may be very instrumental.

Now of all the Catechisms I have seen, in this one thing I must give the Prerogative to this of our Church, & commend it to babes in Christ, for whose sake it was composed; that, in the entrance into it, the child is put in mind of his solemn vow and promise made unto God in his Baptism, which consists in his Abrenunciation, the Profession of
his

The Epistle Dedicatory.

his Faith, and observation of the Commandments: & after to give hearty thanks for his matriculation, or ingrafting into Christ, in which most Catechisms are altogether defective. Further, all the answers following are brief, but full, and fitted for weaker memories, requiring only explication, but not addition. *Quintilian* was wont to say, that they who were to bring up children, must deal by them as men do with narrow-mouth'd bottles, instill their principles, as they do the water, by little and little, for if it be overhastily done, more will flush over and be lost, than powred into the Vessel.

This I have endeavoured here, and if well, I implore your Lordships countenance, if short of your expectation, I humbly beg your Lordships Candor to bring your Mantle, and cast over and cover my defects. And of this I have good hope, because since the first hour, that it was my happiness to be known to your Honour, you have been pleased to look upon me with a fatherly eye. That eye which you cast upon all men that are worthy of your favour. These live in you, and live by you, among which you have set me up to be a prime example. In all gratitude I do acknowledge, that next to his

The Epistle Dedicatory.

Majesty, for whose goodness to me I can never return sufficient thanks, your endeavors from an obscure man have advanced me to a place of honour and dignity in the Church, which that I may manage with prudence and sobriety to the honor of God, the good of his people, the peace, and re-union of this distracted Church, God Almighty assist me with his grace, and you and all good men with their prayers. Did I intend to run out into *Encomiums*, I have an ample field, this one may suffice for a large testimony of your sufficiency, wisdom, sincerity, and piety, that the most excellent of Princes, and the best of men shines upon you in so full a lustre, as if he hoped by you and those he hath chosen to assist you, to dispel all the clouds, that have darkned the face of our Church these Twenty years. The burden is both weighty and troublesome, which that it may be undergone with prudence, and born with patience, is the hearty prayers of him who is

London, 1661.
JUNE 20.

Your Lordships
in all due observance,
WIL. GLOCESTER.



TO
All his loving
PARISHIONERS
OF
LLANDILOVAWR.

The Author prayeth increase of Grace,
Knowledge, Health, and future Happiness.

I may seem strange to wise and learned men,
that after the exact pains by great Di-
vines, taken in the exposition of the
Church Catechism, either in whole, or in
part, I should offer to the publick view
these my less polished conceptions. But before I be ut-
terly condemned for the undertaking of a needless labor,
my desire is, that these reasons which have moved me to
it, be fully weighed, as my Apology, which I hope may
prove so just, that at least I shall deserve excuse, for
more I expect not.

The labours of those learned men I gratefully and inge-
nuously acknowledge, are far beyond any thing I can do, but
withal, either for phrase or matter so high, so absolute, that
they are in many expressions beyond the vulgar capacity,
whom chiefly I intend to inform, and therefore have

a 2 express

The Epistle Dedicatory.

express myself in the easi-est and most familiar Language I could invent, and inserted no more than I held requisite for all to know: all superfluities and quaint or long discourses being purposely omitted.

Besides those excellent endeavors of other learned men are come to the knowledge, much less to the hands of few men in these parts; where I have been Resident more than Twenty years, and may therefore presume, that many may look into these principles of Divinity, delivered by one w^{ho} is well known among them, and cast as kind an eye upon the work, as they have alway done upon the Author: who although no native, yet he acknowledgeth himself for very many civilities, much indebted to the whole people of these antient Britains.

But that which hath most of all prevailed with me, is the sad face of Religion we behold and condole here, ever since the Act of propagation of the Gospel hath been put in execution in these parts. For the Itinerants are so few, so ignorant, so mean, that I say no worse: that as it was in the days of Eli, so now for their sakes, the sacrifice of the Lord is abhorred, and the people are scattered upon these Mountains without a Shepherd.

It was written by Hippolitus, who lived above 1300 years since: That in the last times of Antichrist, the holy houses (of God he means) shall be like a Cottage: the precious body of Christ and his blood shall not be extant: The Liturgy shall be extinguished: the singing of Psalms shall cease: The reading of the Scriptures shall not be heard.

Ad Antichristi novissima tempora Ecclesiarum ades sagittarum instar erunt, preciosum corpus Christi & sanguis non extabit: Liturgia extinguetur. Psalmorum decantatio cessabit: Scripturarum recitatio non audietur. This testimony is cited by Claud. Sainctes in his Treatise before the Liturgies Tome 4. Biblioth. Patrum out of St Hierom upon Daniel, and by Mr. Mede in his Antiquity of Churches. And that which is delivered by Suarez, Pererius, Ovandus, Acolta, Aquipontanus, and Bozius, Learned men of the Romish party, concerning the suppression of Religion in the time of Antichrist, is every way consonant to the judgement of Hippolitus.

Truth

The Epistle Dedicatory.

Truth they say is the child of time, and time hath presented unto us so sad a spectacle in these parts, that there is not one syllable of all this which is *not* verified. The holy houses of God (for in relation to the service of God in them heretofore performed I will yet so call them) these holy houses, I say, are become like the Prophets lodge in a Garden of Cucumbers, deserted, ruined: no Cottage on a hill more d'solate, more defaced, the people having no encouragement to resort to that place where they have neither Minister to pray with, or for them, or to sing praises to God with them, nor any at all in many places, no not so much as a gifted man (as they use to gloss it) to instruct them. For these are not Ubiquitaries, and consequently are forced to be Non-residents, that you may know this was not the sin alone of the now vilified and dejected Clergy.

Mat. 1. 8.

Farther, the precious body and blood of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, exhibited in the Sacrament, hath been prohibited to be administred in publick Assemblies, and the Ministers imprisoned and punished for doing their duty. That the Liturgy is extinguished, singing of Psalms ceased, the reading of the Scriptures, utterly by our new Teachers, neglected and cast aside, I need not say, Since 'tis notoriously known to you, and all other in these parts, that no Service, nor Psalm, nor reading of the Sacred Text, hath been in publick use, ever since these Novellists have set footing amongst us. I leave it now to all judicious men to judge what a near resemblance there is betwixt these our times, and those of Antichrist, of which Hippolitus gave us those former Characters.

Left then the foundations of Religion, which are so much shaken, should perish together with the practise of it, and be buried under so much rubbish which is cast upon it,

The Epistle Dedicatory.

I have taken this pains to preserve its lustre and integrity in the memories of all those, who bear any true love to substantial, confessed, and ancient Truths.

New light is a Notion of a hot brain, and will easily like an ignis fatuus, or Will with the wisp carry a man out of the safe and straight way, and thereby endanger the man: But the ancient Light established and received in the Church of England is a secure guide to direct you, that you neither incline to the cunningly composed charms of Popery on the right hand, nor the brain-sick imaginations of men of unstable minds on the left.

That Truth which this my once glorious Mother taught me, and by a sad search I found consonant to the Word of God, I always held forth unto you, for those many years I was permitted to be your Pastor, being all that time your Catechist: and what I then opened at large, that in a short sum (my dear Parishioners) I here present unto you, and all other Christian people, as a memorial and Legacy of my Love and desire, that they and you should live and dye good Christians.

Above these Three years by the severity of these times, as you know too well, and I with grief write, I have not been suffered, but peremptorily prohibited to make use of my Talent to your benefit, or any other: being ejected and silenced, not for any crime then alledged or for ought I can understand to be alledged against me, except it were that I could not be perswaded to subscribe the Engagement. For that I suffer: and I would to God, that in it, I suffered only, mine is but a temporal loss, yours is a spiritual. I can feed my self, when you and millions besides starve for want of Heavenly food. The sharp famine that is come upon this people, ought to be lamented with tears of blood. Therefore, said I, Look away from me, I will weep bitterly

The Epistle Dedicatory.

bitterly; labour not to comfort me, because of the spoiling of the daughter of my people.

For the event upon the Act is so lamentable, that it will despoil many of the power and life of Religion, and without some vigorous remedy, a few years will more and more confirm it. There being no visible means left to continue in the memories of the aged, the principles which they had learned, nor to bring to the memories of the younger sort the necessary foundations of Christian Religion.

To supply which defect, and to prevent as much as in me lies, this inconvenience, I have as plainly, and as briefly as I could, collected this sum of Divinity. Speak I may not, write only I can, and if you and your posterity with other Christians shall make good use of this plain food, I little doubt, but this little, will nourish you in a right way to Heaven. For here you are directed what to know, and what to do, in which Two consists the life of Religion.

'Tis the highest of wisdom, so much as lies in us, of man to make a God. For as it is the most noble work of the Divine mind, perpetually to contemplate it self, and rest in the eternal love of it self: so it is also the sum of all our wisdom and piety, to know God, and to love God. We know him, when we know his Will, and we love him, when we make his Will our Rule for our life and practise. This is, to use St. Pauls words, to behold as in a glass the glory of the Lord, and to be changed into the same image. The High Priest in the old Law, was to have upon him a double ornament, a Plate of pure Gold upon his head, and another Plate of twelve precious stones upon his breast: the seat of knowledge is the head, the breast the place of love, by which not unaptly may be shadowed out to us, that we reserve for our Christian Piety the two chief parts about us, the head for the knowledge, and the heart or breast for the love of our God.

Upon

Οὐδὲ γὰρ
ἵεσθαι
κατὰ τὸ δό-
γματ.
Hierocles

2 Cor. 3. 18.

Exod. 28. 15.
&c 36.

The Epistle Dedicatory.

Upon the reflection of these Two I have drawn all these Principles. God make you as careful in the knowing and practising, as I have been cautelous in the composing; for I have made choice of that onely, which I judged necessary to inform your understanding, and rectify your Will, to increase your knowledge, and better your life. You may then by the knowledge and practise of what is here delivered, grow up to be perfect men in Christ Jesus, and receive at last a Crown of glory, which is the perpetual prayer of him, who is

Your aged Pastor

WILLIAM GLOCESTER.



The Title or Inscription.

A C A T E C H I S M.

That is to say, An *Instruction* to be learned of every Child, before he be brought to be confirmed by the Bishop.



Catechism is a word used in a Church sense signifying a little Book, in which is delivered the brief sum, or chief principles of Christian Religion. He who teacheth this is called the Catechist, and he who is taught is, *Catechumenus*, a Disciple, a Scholar, one taught, instructed or edified. For *κατηχησων* is rendred by *Heb. 6. 1.*
sycheus, the learnedst of Grammarians, *διδαδμενων*, I will *Gal. 6. 6.*
build, or edify.

All those former words are derived from *ἠχος*, a sound from which comes our English word *Echo*, which is but a reciprocation of the voice, or a return or report of what is uttered. Not without reason then the Spirit of God chose, and the wisdom of the Church retained, those fore-mentioned notions, because the chief principles of Christianity were at first instilled by the ear: the sound of the Apostles words going out into all Lands. For at the highest they are but *Echoes*, or sounds, whose propriety is to report what is heard. Which ought to be observed accurately by all Catechists, who are not to teach for Doctrine their own

*Qua nec res-
cere loquens
Nec prior ipsa
loqui didicit.*

conceptions, but to sound into the ears of others, what they have heard, and nothing but what they have heard, to wit, the certain words of their Master and his Disciples first sounded in the Gospel.

2. Of the Catechist.

In *St Paul* he is called ὁ καὶ διδάσκει or he that teacheth; in the Primitive Church, ὁ καὶ διδάσκει. To which Office, though they, who now pretend to the highest gifts, will not stoop, yet (a) great men in the Church have owned that name.

(a) *Pantenus*
Clemens Al.

Origen. Hie. o-

cles in the famous Church of Alexandria. Euseb. lib. 6. Great Cyril at Jerusalem. Greg. Nyss. Hieron. in Catalago Script. Ecclesiast. August. wrote a Book de Catechiz. rudibus. Hieron in Apol. ad Rom. confesseth that he had for his Catechists Nazianz. and Didymus Optatus in the Church of Carthage appointed Doctor Audientum. Cyp. Ep. 24.

3. Of the Catechumeni, or Catechised.

These *Audientes* or Hearers, commonly called *Catechumeni* in the Church story, the word and root of which word we find in the New-Testament, being to learn the Catechism, before they were admitted to the Sacrament, were of two sorts.

Gal. 6. 6.

Luke 1. 4.

1 Cor. 14. 19.

Act. 18. 25.

Tertull de co-

rona militis.

Cyp. de haret.

baptiz. Ep. 13

Aug. de fide &

operibus.

1. *Adulti*, men grown, whether of Jews or Gentiles, who were perswaded to receive the Gospel, but were not yet baptized, and consequently not to be admitted to the Sacrament, before they had given an account of their faith and promised to live a holy life consonant to the rules of the Gospel.

2. Christians children born in the Church, who, because born within the Covenant, and by Baptisme received, when they were grown to capacity, were taught the principles of Christianity, of which when they could give a reasonable account, they were brought to the Bishop to be confirmed, of which more by and by.

4. Of the matter of the Catechism.

These principles were only such things as were necessarily, or very profitably to be known by every Christian.

The

The question was short, and the answer full and pertinent: and that they might be the easilier learned and remembred, they were conveyed in the fewest and plainest words that might be. That caution of the wise being observed, *Doctor doceat discipulos via brevi*, Let the Master teach his Scholars the shortest way. No rule being much worth which is long, and loaded with unnecessary words. To this end our Saviour drew the whole Law to Two heads:

a Love to God: Love to our neighbor. *St. Paul* to one syllable. *b* Love is the fulfilling of the Law. Repentance toward *c* God, and Faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ, are set down as the Summe of the Gospel. These then are the principal matter of any Catechism, and the briefer the Rules are about them, the better.

a Mar. 22. 27.

b Rom. 13. 9.

10.

c Act. 20. 21.

Heb. 6. 1.

Divines may learn to be wise from other professors, who deliver the grounds of their Art and Science in little Breviates; knowing well that the Scholar is not capable of deeper discourses till these grounds be well laid and committed to memory. Hence it is, that Lawyers have their Institutions; Physitians their Aphorismes; Philosophers their Introductions; Grammarians their Accidence; Scrivners their Characters, and first draughts of Letters; In a word, all knowledge proceeds from simple terms; and so must the knowledge of Christ: it must be taught in the easiest way, and learned by the easiest rules, which ought to be and is in the Catechism summarily, briefly, and yet fully proposed. He that knows more can but descant upon this, and he that knows less knows too little.

5. *This is to be learned of every Child.*

With us the persons to be instructed in these principles are Children, which is not to be understood exclusively, as if those who are grown to riper age were not to be taught in these. But the Church, supposing the aged to be already well grounded in these principles, fits and enjoins these Lessons to the younger sort. In this being awed by that command which God gave to the Jews, *Thou* Deut. 6. 7. & *shalt sharpen them*, i. e. my Commandments, Statutes, 4. 9. 10.

a Ephes. 6. 4. judgements, or teach them diligently thy Children: and
 b Gen. 18. 17. obeying that Apostolical precept, *Fathers bring up (a) your*
 c 2 Tim. 3. 15. *children in the nurture and admonition of the Lord*; treading
 & 1. 5. *in the footsteps of Abraham, that (b) taught his household*
the Covenant, and the Mother of (c) Timothy who instructed
her Son in the Scripture from a Child.

By this means Children seasoned with the principles of Religion, before malice, self-love, by-ends, or corrupt examples have depraved their minds and actions, a good foundation would be laid betimes for direction of the course of their whole lives, and the seed of the word would be in them preserved whole and sound. Men would be better-livers, and sounder beleivers. Horrid vices would not usurp the name of vertues, nor hellish opinions appear vested with the cloak of truth. For out of question were the younger sort imbued with the undeniable grounds, and clear knowledge of the Orthodox Religion, they could not be so easily carried down the headlong stream of wickedness, nor moved aside by every light puff, and wind of Doctrine; The Jesuite would not gain so many Profelites, nor the Sectary so many light-headed followers.

6. *Before he be brought he be confirmed by the Bishop.*

The love, care, and gravity then of the Church, was that of a Mother, that would have all her children brought up in the fear and nurture of the Lord: Of which education, when they could give a sufficient testimony, then they were to be brought to the Bishop to be confirmed, And she professeth the reasons, which led her to this just and pious resolution, to be these Three.

In the Rubrick
before the Ca-
techism.

1. That Children being of discretion, may then themselves with their own mouths, and with their own consent, openly before the Church, ratify and confirm, what their Godfathers and Godmothers have promised for them in Baptism: and also promise that by the grace of God they will evermore endeavor themselves faithfully to observe and keep such things, as they by their
own

own mouth, and confession have assented to.

2. Forasmuch as Confirmation is ministred to them that be baptized, that by imposition of hands and prayer, they may receive strength and defence against all Temptations to sin, and assaults of the World and the Devil: It is most meet to be administred, when Children come to that age, that partly by the frailty of their own flesh, partly by the assaults of the World and the Devil, they begin to be in danger to fall into sundry kinds of sin.

3. For that it is agreeable with the usage of the Church in times past, whereby it was ordained, that confirmation should be administred to them of perfect age, that they being instructed in Christs Religion, should openly profess their own faith, and promise to be obedient to the will of God.

Thus far the Rubrick. And the Reasons are weighty. For the Child being grown up before God, the Bishop, and the Congregation, with his own mouth takes upon him the same obligation, which at his Baptism his Sureties had undertaken for him: so that he frees them, and binds himself, renewing the old Bond to perform the conditions; in beleiving, doing, and forsaking, what is to be believed, done, or forsaken. Which double vow made first by others solemnly for him, then again as solemnly renewed by him, sadly thought on, in all reason will have a powerful impresson on the heart, for the present, and an effectual influence in his whole life for the future.

2. Which work, because it is difficult, and beyond the power of man, therefore the Bishop was to impose his hands upon him, to bless him, to pray for him, that God would strengthen him, and daily increase in him, his manifold gifts of grace: that he would bestow upon him the Spirit of Wisdom and Understanding: the spirit of Counsel and Ghostly strength: the spirit of Knowledge and true Godliness, and fill him with the spirit of his Holy fear. With much more to the same purpose, as it is to be seen in those pious prayers appointed to be used at Confirmation, Which the Church held fit then to be administred,

The Prayer at
Confirmation.

*Cereus in viti-
um Hor.*

mitted, when temptations, in respect of the Childs proclivity to vice, might most strongly assault him. 3. And that which moved our Church of *England* to retain this, was, because the first Reformers in it found that this rite was agreeable to the usage of the Church in times past. Which is very true. There be, that make it an Apostolical institution, having an Eye to *Heb. 6. 2.* And *Calvin, Beza,* and *Aretius* seem (upon the place) to like well of it. Sure I am that the antient Fathers and Councils are full, and evident witnesses for it. The Councils enjoyn it to be done; the Fathers witness that it was done, whose Testimonies I could and would produce at large, but that it is already done by * a grave Divine, a true lover of Peace, Truth, and Order.

* In a manual that bears the title of *Χειροτονία*, or the

Apostolique Institution of Imposition of hands for confirmation, printed *Anno 1649.* There also may be read the approbation of it by the learnedst Divines of the Reformed Churches, with the profits that will ensue upon the use of it, and the inconveniencies upon the neglect.

Were Confirmation in frequent use, and restored to its original purity, these benefits would from thence ensue,

1. Catechising would be brought in use and esteem.
2. The unity of Faith would be maintained.
3. Parents would be more careful to instruct their Children.
4. Children would be sounder in Faith, and better manner'd.
5. Ignorant and scandalous persons might be better discerned, and so the offence taken from mixt Communion, removed.

6. The wrangle about the formality of a Church Covenant, and collecting of members, quieted and compos'd.

There being in Confirmation the substance of what is so much, and so hotly contended for, and that far better grounded and bottomed than any new device can be. It is my hearts desire, and let the God of peace in mercy be pleased to bow down his ear to it, that our Brethren of
the

the Church way may be moved to recall, revive and admit this (at least ancient Ecclesiastical, if not Apostolical) institution. For thereby they might effect in a peaceable way, the dissipation of the clouds of ignorance, the restitution of the true light of the Gospel, the removal of prophane persons from participation of the Lords body, the admission of such as charity shall judge worthy. I say all this may be done in a peaceable way, which (not without great difficulty, regret, effusion of Christian blood, and much wealth,) hath been projected and pursued.

I shall only add one thing more, and so close up this Preface, which is an humble request to all our dissenting brethren: that since they dislike this short instruction of our Mother the Church of *England*, they would agree to propose a Catechisme of their own, by which it may appear, what questions are requisite to be demanded of, and to be answerd to, by any Neophyte, before he may be admitted a Member of a collected Church.

And there is great reason for this my request: first because I read not of any settled Church except the *Arrians* who have been or are at this day, without such a brief Introduction. To them indeed, the *Arrians*, I mean *Athanasius* objects, that they had no Catechism, Scult. in lra. 8. cap.

Then again, without this, they cannot assure us of any harmony among themselves: but to us their Church must seem like to that state of the *Cyclops* in *Euripides*, *Eurip. Cyc.* of which *Silenus* thus certifieth *Ulysses*, *ἀνδρες ἄνδρες ἄνδρες* *ὦδω*, no man in any thing heard what the other said: or if you had rather, like those builders at *Babel*, where men understood not one another, which hindred the work, because that one was not able to know what his fellow called for.

Bring me, quoth one, a Trowel quickly, quick,
One brings him up a Hammer: hew this Brick
Another bids, and then they cleave a Tree.
Make fast this Rope, saith one, they let it flee:

Du Tartan.

One

One calls for Planks, another Morter lacks,
They bring the first a stone, the last an Axe.

In this confusion, as there can be no certainty among themselves, so there cannot be any encouragement to those whom they account without, to come in and joyn with them, till they may know upon what terms to be admitted; which by a brief Catechism set forth by a common consent of their Congregational Churches would be apparent.

Napeir.
Brightman.

Lastly, this lies rather upon them to condescend to, if they be, as some conceive, the 144000. that stood upon Mount *Sion* with the Lamb. *Rev.* 14. 1, 2, For among them there was the voice of Harpers harping with their Harps. Harpers are Musicians, and Musick pleaseth not, except the strings be first tuned, and if it be in concert, as here it was, then the instruments must be tuned one to another. For where this is not done, we may take up the old proverb, *Asinus ad lyram*, the Ass takes up the Harp. and those that hearken to the Musick, deserve *Midas's* reward. I humbly then beseech them to tune their Harps, and their Harps one to another, that the discord offend no more; so shall we the easilier be perswaded, that they are of that number that stood with the Lamb upon Mount *Sion*. because *Sion* is built as a City, that is at unity in it self, or compacted together: so shall we be the more ready to lend an ear to their harmony. Now of this we can have no certain knowledge, much less encouragement, till we find in them musical souls and an harmony in judgement, and this their judgement manifested that way I have proposed. To which motion I beg of them to yield for his sake, who came to reconcile all things in Heaven and Earth, God to man, man to God, Angels to men, and man to man, being the Prince of peace, our Lord and only Saviour Jesus Christ.

Psal. 122. 3.

The sum of the whole Catechism.

IT contains,

1. A Preface, absolved in the Four first questions.
2. The Creed of the Apostles, and the Exposition of these Three.
3. The Ten Commandments,
4. The Lords Prayer,
5. The Doctrine of the Two Sacraments, Baptism, and the Supper of the Lord.

Quest. What is the first question of the Catechism?

Answ. What is your Name? A. B. C. &c.

Quest. Why begin you with that question?

Answ. Upon very good reason, viz. That a man should never call to mind his name, but remember that he is a Christian: for his Name was given him, it was not at his birth belonging to him. Every Christian bearing Two names; the one of Nature, which is the name of his *Datum nob* House, Family, or Kindred, and this he brings into the *Natum.* world with him; the other of Grace, of Favour, being his *Sir name*, that is over and above added unto him. And as the first puts him in mind what he was, so doth this second what he is.

*Sobre nombre
superior name.*

2. And it is set before the other, because it is to be esteemed above the other, It being an higher honour, grace, and favour, and a matter of more comfort and hope to be a Christian, than to be a man. Our Regeneration is to be prized before our Generation, our new birth before our first birth. For by the one we are miserable, by the other we are in the way to be happy.

*Phil. 3. 2 verse
4. 22 9.
Psal. 51. 5.
Rom. 7. 24, 25.*

3. It is wisdom then in a Christian, by occasion of this question,

1. To enquire how he came by this name, and to know that his name is a signe of something that he is to learn and do. That he is first to learn the duties of Christian Religion, and then to practise them: walking worthy of that name by which he is called, lest he cast a disgrace upon it. It is Honourable and Holy, being imposed Ephes. 4. 5

C

by

by a Sacrament: yet an unholy life will spot it, and make it unholy and dishonourable.

2. When this Name is imposed, care would be taken, that all fantastical names be avoided, and such only imposed, that may bring to mind the piety, charity, vertues, and excellencies of those persons that bare them, whose ways and works may be patterns for posterity to imitate. Which Rule we shall find very curiously observed by the Patriarchs of old, and by the people of God in the Scriptures.

Quest. Who gave you this Name?

Ans. My Godfathers and Godmothers, in my Baptism, wherein I was made a member of Christ, the Child of God, and an inheritor of the kingdom of Heaven.

The Explication.

In which answer you are to consider,

1. The Imposers of your Name: Your Godfather and Godmothers.

2. When it was imposed: In your Baptism.

3. The Benefits, Favours, and Honours then given, which are Three.

a 1 Cor. 6. 15.

b Rom. 8. 14.

17.

Rom. 3. 17.

1. *a* To be made a member of Christ, *Ephes.* 5. 30.

2. *b* The Child of God, 1 *John* 3. 1, 2.

3. An Inheritor of the Kingdom of Heaven.

Of Godfathers and Godmothers:

As when one is born: first he needs a Nurse, after a Mother: one to feed, another to instruct him; so every Babe in Christ needs milk, and after strong meat, that he may grow to be a perfect man in Christ Jesus. It seemed good to the wisdom of the Church to that end, to take sureties of the child, who being honest and charitable men, would undertake to see what was promised to be performed.

Some of them call them witnesses very improperly: as if they came to see and testify what is done. It favours more of Piety, to give them their old names, by which they are put in mind, how they ought to be affected toward those children for Gods sake, and to take care for their Religious education, for which the Church accepts them as sureties:

Fun. & Tremel.
in 1^a. 8. a. de-
rive this custom
from the Jews.
Adhibui mihi
testes fidos U-
riam sacerdo-
tem & Zecha-
riam filium
Jeberachia, i.
e. Viros nomi-
natim advoca-
torum testaren-
tur nomen illud
filio meo impo-
situm in Eccle-
siacum circum-
cideretur. Nam

eo tempore indita fuisse olim a parentibus nomina constat ex Gen. 21. 3, 4. Luk. 1. 21. Atque ex hoc visu profectum esse illum nostrum constat, quo certi homines speciatim adhibentur testes accessus ad Christum & Ecclesiam per Baptismum & nominis Baptismo inditi — Hos vulgo Compadres & Comadres Graci olim Euvrines appellabant. But more antiently they were called *Αυδοχοι*, and by the Latine Church *Suscipiores*, *Sponsores*, *Fide iussores*. *Æthiopum Canon universalis* 3 *Bibliothica parvum*, Tom. 4. *Tertull. de Baptis.* cap. 18. *Quid necesse est Sponsores etiam periculo ingeri.*

Aug. Ep. 23. ad bonifacium Offeruntur parvuli ad percipiendam spiritusalem gratiam ab istis, quorum gestantur manibus. He means the Godfathers:

But we have yet more antient testimonies for this custom: The Baptized desiring by the Mediation of his *Αυδοχοι* Undertakers, that he might be a partaker of God, and of the Divine Mysteries. After his Profession, the Priest *ἐπιτίθειν αὐτῷ τὴν νεανίαν τὴν χάριν*, *Καὶ ὁ ποιῶν αὐτὸ ἐπορεύεται καὶ λέγει τοῖς ἱεροῖς τὸ ἀνάθεμα καὶ τὸ ἀνάλογον*, *1^a celest. Hierach. Dionys.* cap. 2. In the last chapter of the same Book, he gives the reason why the Church Baptized Infants: and shews the manner of their sulception. *Τὸ τὸ τοῖς θεοῖς ἡμῶν καὶ θυγατέρας ἐν τῷ ἐλεηδοῦν, ἔδωκεν εἰσαγγεῖν τὴν βίαν καὶ τὴν τοῦ θεοῦ δύναμιν, ὥστε τοῖς θυγατέρας τῷ θεοῦ συγγενῆς πνεύματος γενέσθαι καὶ τὴν τοῦ θεοῦ μεμνημένον ἀγαθὸν τὴν θεῖαν πνευματικὴν. Καὶ τὸ λοιπὸν ἐν αὐτῷ τὸ πνεῦμα πνεῦμα, ὡς ἐπὶ δεῖν παρὰ. Καὶ συνέλπειν ἐπὶ ἀνάθεμα.* with much more to the same purpose in the following words. Say that this book be not his, whose name it bears, yet it is known to be very antient. *Justin Martyr*, or whosoever is the Author of that book in resp. ad *Orthodoxos* *Ἀγία, ἡ δὲ δια τὴν βαπτισμῶν ἀγαθὸν τὸ βερεῖν τὴν πνεῦμα τῷ θεοῦ συγγενῆς ἐν τῷ πνεύματι.*

Platina in vita Hygini affirms out of the antient Records, That *Hyginus* Bishop of Rome, and Martyr *Ann. Dom. 144.* voluit unum saltem Patrum unamque Matrem Baptismo interesse. Sic enim eos appellant, saith he, qui infantes tenent, dum baptizantur.

2. The second thing to be considered is, that this name was imposed in Baptism, which is all one, as if I had said, when I became a Christian; Baptism being the Sacrament of Admission, Entrance, or Matriculation into the Church. But of this point more when I come to speak of Baptism.

3. The third thing to be considered, is those words,

When I was made,

This intimates, that a man is *factus non natus*. Not born what he is now, a Christian, but was made such: which is thus expressed by St John, cap. 1. ver. 12, 13. *But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the Sons of God, even to them that believe in his Name, which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God,*

For the better understanding of this point, it is necessary that we know that there is a threefold estate of man. 1. The one that is past and lost. 2. The second that is present, and recovered. 3. The third that is future and expected.

1. Of Mans first Estate.

Gen. 1. 27.
Col. 3. 10.

The first estate of man is that in his Creation, when he was made after the image of God, a righteous, and a holy creature: perfect in his understanding, in his will, and in his affections. 1. Then God gave him a Law written in his heart, that taught him his whole duty. 2. Then God gave him a positive Law, that he should not eat of one tree only in the Garden of Paradise. *Gen. 2. 27.*

3. Then God gave him ability and strength to perform what he required. And upon this performance.

Gen. 1. 27.
Gen. 5. 1.
Ephes. 4. 24.
Col. 3. 10.
Wisd. 3. 23.

1: A continuance of this light and strength to direct and assist him.

2. A reward of this performance. To wit, a possibility to have lived for ever without sinning, and to have been for ever happy. *For death entered by sin, Rom. 5. 12. 1 Cor. 15. 21, 22.*

This

This was mans first estate in which *Adam* was created, being the representative of all mankind. And the perfections that were in him, and the promise made unto him by the first Covenant, did belong unto all mankind, But this is that estate which is past and lost.

Rom. 5. à ver.
14 to the end.
of the chapter.
1 Cor. 15. 22
Heb. 7. 9. 10.

2. Of Mans second Estate.

To understand this Estate, we must consider Two things.

1. What condition man is in by *Adams* fall.

2. What condition man is in by Gods Grace.

1. By *Adams* fall and disobedience, all men are miserable, and our misery lies in this, that all the faculties of our souls are corrupted, the imaginations of our hearts are evil continually, we have drawn upon our selves a guilt, and this guiltiness makes us liable to punishment.

Rom. 7. 18, 19,
20.
Gen. 6. 8.
Mat. 15. 19.
Psal. 51. 5.
Gen. 2. 17.

Adam did eat the forbidden fruit, and so sinned: and we, being in his Loins, sinned with him. *Rom.* 5. 19. By one mans disobedience many were made sinners. Now this sin is ordinarily by Divines called Original sin.

Gen. 3. 6.

And upon the Commission of this sin.

1. *Adam* was cast out of Paradise, *Gen.* 3. 24.

2. Condemned to death, *Gen.* 2. 17. *Rom.* 5. 12, 13.

3. And became an object of Gods anger, *Rom.* 5. 16.

4. He lost Gods Image. His light was dimmed, his strength totally weakened, There was Error, Darkness, and disorder in all the faculties of his soul, *Ephes.* 4. 17, 18.

Col. 3. 10.

5. Lastly, he forfeited his Crown, and was deprived of Eternity and Felicity.

And from that hour to this, there hath been no man living (our Saviour Christ only excepted) that can be justified in Gods sight, *Psal.* 143. 2. All having sinned, and so coming short of the Glory of God, *Rom.* 3. 23.

And this is now our present estate of Nature, in which we are born, which is a wretched and lamentable condition: in that being thus considered, we are all lost, and cast away, being Children of wrath, and to be inheritors of eternal fire prepared for the Devil and his Angels.

Psal. 51. 5.
Ephes. 2. 3.
2. Pet. 2. 14.
Mat. 25. 4.

2. Now to raise our hearts in the sad thoughts of this our wretched estate, necessary it is, that we take a view of that comfortable condition, that man is in by the Grace of God: which is this.

Man being thus fallen, lost, and condemned to death, it pleased God out of meer Mercy, freely to make a New Covenant with him for life and salvation. It was made with the same *Adam* that fell, and in whom we sinned, in these words, *The seed of the Woman shall break the Serpents head*, That is, Christ, who was the seed of the Woman, as appears, *Gal. 3. 16.* should break and destroy the Serpents head, that is, the power, strength and dominion of the Devil. And this Covenant was repeated, and renewed to *Abraham. Gen. 22. 17, 18.* In thy seed, that is, Christ, *Gal. 3. 16.* shall all the Nations of the earth be blessed. Christ then is the foundation of this second Covenant, by which all Mercy and Grace is made over to us. For in him all the promises of God are *Yea and Amen*, *2 Cor. 1. 20.* Yea, that is, Verified; and Amen, that is, Ratified and confirmed immutably.

Now the particulars of this Covenant are these,

1. A Revelation of his Will, or the Law of Faith, according to which Christians ought to live, *Heb. 8. 10, 11.* *I will put my Laws in their minds, and write them in their hearts.*

2. A Promise and assurance to deliver us from our enemies, *Luk. 1. 71.* which are Satan, and Sin.

1. From Satan, *Col. 1. 13.* He hath delivered us from the power of darkness. And *2 Tim. 1. 26.* God sends his Ministers to instruct, that men may recover themselves out of the snare of the Devil.

2. From Sin, that is, from the condemnation for sin, and the dominion of sin, *Rom. 8. 2.* *For the Law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus, hath freed me from the Law of sin and death.* And the promise is extant, *Heb. 8. 12.* *I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and iniquities, I will remember no more.*

3. A Promise he hath made to give us grace and strength

Strength to serve him in Righteousness and Holiness all the days of our life, *Luke* 1. 17. Which though it be not perfect in this life, yet if it be with a perfect upright sincere and single heart, he hath promised to accept it. Now this is the present state, which in Christ we have recovered. 2 Cor. 8. 11.

3. The third state of a Christian is future, and follows upon this state of Grace, being the Crown of Immortality and Eternal Glory, Of which I shall speak more, when I expound the last Article of the Creed.

The seal of those promises made over unto man by this second Covenant, is Baptism: to which those have right and title, who are born within the pale of the Church, and at the setting of the Seal they have these three priviledges, to become,

1. A Member of Christ.

That is, to be reckoned Christians: for Christ is the head of the Church, and all Christians the body, of which every one that professeth Christian Religion is a part, and is so to be esteemed. But these parts are of Two sorts. Col. 1. 18.
Eph. 1. 22, 23.
Eph. 4. 16.

1. Either *Equivocal* parts, so taken and reputed by us, such as are a glass-eye, or a wooden leg to a man which are so called, but truly are not such: and whosoever professes the supernatural verities revealed by Christ, and make use of the Holy Sacraments, may in this sense be called the members of Christ, because they are reckoned for parts of his Visible Body. 1 John 2. 19.
Heb. 6. 4, 5, 6.
Mat. 13. 24, 47.

2. Or *Univocal* parts, That in Name and Nature are true Believers, which are indeed the true members of Christ: and do belong unto his Mystical body, and receive from him as from their head, life, sense and motion. They are united to him, live in him, and are informed by his Spirit. They are washed and regenerated by his blood. And they have his Righteousness imputed unto them, By which they are freed from the guilt and punishment of sin. This the Apostle teacheth, *1 Cor.* 1. 30. *But of him ye are in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us, wisdom, righteousness, Sanctification, redemption.* John 15. 5.
1 Cor. 12. 12, 13.
Ephes. 4. 4.
Rom. 8. 1.
Rev. 1. 5.
1 John 1. 7.

And

And to these last only the Two next priviledges belong : to be first,

2. *A child of God.*

God is a Father, which being a word of Relation, must imply that he hath a Son, or Sons.

1. One Son only he hath by Nature: *Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ*, Psal. 2. 7. *His only begotten* John 3. 16. The very character, and brightness of his persons. Heb. 1, 3.

2. But other Sons he hath by Adoption, that through Christ he hath adopted for his Children, being bought with his blood, and quickened by his Spirit, and all those who are true members of his body, are his Children in this sense, and have power to call him *Abba, Father*, Rom. 8. 15. Gal. 4. 6.

3. *An inheritor of the Kingdom of Heaven.*

This benefit follows upon the former. For this is *St Pauls* conclusion. Rom. 8. 17. *If we be Children then also Heirs, even the Heirs of God, and Heirs annexed with Christ.*

Heb. 1. 2.

Inheritances descend by Birth, or are conveyed by Gift, or Will; The first way we were no Heirs, not born to the Crown in Heaven. So Christ only the true natural Son of God was the Heir. But the second way, that is, by Gift, and Will of God we come to inherit, and therefore the Apostle saith, that we were Co-Heirs or Heirs annexed.

Luk 12. 32.

And this is so Peculiar to his Children, that no other have any portion in it. Men at large may have large portions of earthly blessings. Mat. 5. 45. But this inheritance is a Reserve, 1 Pet. 1. 3, 4. *It is a gift. Fear not little flock it is your Fathers will to give you a kingdom.*

Quest. *What did your Godfathers and Godmothers promise for you?*

A. They did promise and vow three things in my name. First. *That I should forsake the Devil and all his Works, the pomps and vanities of the wicked world, and all the sinful lusts of the flesh.* Secondly,

Secondly, That I should believe, all the Articles of the Christian Faith.

Thirdly, That I should keep Gods holy Will and Commandments, and walk in the same all the days of my life.

Explication.

Three things are here vowed solemnly in the name of the Baptized; Abrenunciation, Faith, Obedience.

1. An utter renouncing and forsaking of Gods enemies, and that which he hates,

1. The Devil and all his works.

2. The pomps and vanities of the wicked world.

3. All the sinful lusts of the flesh. The sum is, That in him that is baptized, there be a constant resolution to have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, Eph. 5. 11. to this end there is first a profession made,

1. Of Abrenunciation.

That this was required of those who were baptized, appears by undeniable testimonies of the ancient Fathers. He that was to be baptized was commanded. *Τοις βαπτιζομένοις*

ἐν τῷ τῷ αὐτῷ Σατανᾷ, καὶ ἐν ὅσῳ τῷ τῷ Σατανᾷ; οὐ μόνον τῷ τῷ Σατανᾷ: Ἰερ. κ. cap. 2. And again esp. ult. *Ὁ τοῦ Σατανᾷ, καὶ οὐ μόνον τῷ τῷ Σατανᾷ, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὅσῳ τῷ Σατανᾷ.*

Aquam adituri sub amplexibus manu confestimur, nos renunciare diabolo, & pompe, & Angelis ejus. Tertull. de coron. Mil. c. 3. Id. de Spectac. c. 4. Cum aquam ingressi Christianam fidem profitemur, renunciasse nos diabolo, & pompe, & angelis ejus ore nostro confessamur, &c. Id. de Idol. cap. 6. Quomodo renunciavimus Diabolo & angelis ejus, si eos Deos facimus? We may read this formula abrenunciationis in the Apostles Institutions Clem. lib. 7. cap. 4. Abrenuncio Satana, & operibus ejus, pompis, cultui, Angelis, & Machinationibus ejus. Saeculo renunciaveramus, cum baptizati sumus.

Accedens ad Baptismum renunciat maligno spiritui, & omnibus damnoſis ejus pompis. Many more testimonies might be brought to this purpose out of Orig. in Numero 12 hom. Pacian. de Baptis. Cyril. Hierosol. Catechis. 1. Mystag. Ambr. lib. de iis, qui myst. initiuntur, cap. 1. & lib. 1. de sacram. Basil. lib. de spiritu. And Pamel in his notes upon Cyprian. Ep. 7. conceives that it was taken from those words of our Saviour, Luk 14. 33. καὶ ὁ ἀποστρέψας τὴν πλάτην τῷ Σατανᾷ, cannot be my disciple. And certain it is that Cyprian, in his exposition upon the Lords Prayer, citing this very form, Qui saeculo renunciavimus & divitiis & ejus pompas, &c. cites this very Text, Qui non renunciat omnibus, Luk 14. 26, 27. The use of Abrenuncio is apparent in the Ethiop. Canon for Baptism: And in that also of Severus the Patriarch of Alexandria. Tom. 4. Biblioth. patr.

Neither is it easie to prove that ever Baptism was administered without this Abrenunciation: to lead to which there was an Interrogatory proposed, the self-same which is now proposed at Baptism. To which *St Peter* 1 c. 3. 21. 17. is thought to allude when he saith, that the Baptism which saveth us, is not (as legal purifications were) a cleansing of the flesh from outward impurity, but *ἐπερωτημα* an interrogative trial of a good conscience towards God. For *ἐπερωτημα* signifies not an answer, but a question, and so is always taken in the Scriptures, for here is a mutual Stipulation, Of God to save us: Of us again sincerely and conscionably to serve him, and lead a new life.

Hook. Eccl.
pol. lib. 5 p. 63.
Eftius in loc.
Arct. in loc.

Use. Hence then we are to learn,

- Tertul. ad uxor.* 1. Where a Christian is to begin, at Abrenunciation, and to say, *expuo flatum immundum*: or in *Bazils* language *ἐκπομπὴν*, I spit out and defie the evil Spirit. To deny ungodliness and worldly lusts, *Tit.* 2. 12. To cease from evil, *Isai.* 1. 16. And make no provision for the flesh, *Rom.* 13, 14. which in one word is mortification.
2. That if this be not done, we are *sædifragi*, our vow in Baptism is broken. Whereas God hath commanded, thou shalt perform thy vows unto the Lord, *Mat.* 5. 33. If we perform our promise made in Baptism, we are true Christians, not else. *Greg.*
- Psal.* 78. 57. 3. For the performance of this vow, because mans nature is slippery, and apt to start aside like a broken bow, the wisdom of the Church took Sureties of the Baptized.

2. Of Faith. To believe all the Articles of the Christian Faith.

The next thing which a Christian vows, is to believe: where I heere things are vowed.

1. The habit of Faith. To believe.
2. The settling that faith upon a right object. The Articles of the Christian faith.
3. That this Faith be entire. To believe all the Articles.

1. Of the Habit of Faith.

Faith is sometimes taken for an outward hypocritical profession of Religion, or a bare perswasion of the truth of it. We usually call it an Historical Faith, which may be in the Devil. Of this *St James* speaks cap. 2. 19. *Thou believest that there is one God, thou doest well: The Devils also believe and tremble.*

But in this place it implies far more, viz.

1. *Notitiam*, a knowledge of Gods Will in general, and in particular of the Articles proposed in the Creed.

2. *Assensum*, A firm Assent to the truth of Gods Revelations, grounded upon the authority of the Revealer.

3. *Fiduciam* or *adherentiam*. A trust and confidence or full perswasion that thereby we shall obtain Salvation. And this is called a justifying Faith.

This is a gift of God, *Eph.* 2. 8. and is wrought inwardly by his holy Spirit, *Rom.* 1. 3. and outwardly by the revelation of his word, *Joh.* 20. 31. *Rom.* 10. 14.

The subject in which this Faith is, is the heart, which comprehends the understanding, the will and the affections; which being regenerated in every true beleever,

Act. 8. 8.
Rom. 10. 10.

1. The understanding is enlightened with all saving knowledge.

Col. 1. 9.
Phil. 2. 3.
Can. 2. 5.

2. The Will is enclined to assent to, and receive what we know.

3. And the affections bent to love it.

Which Three when they meet in any Christian soul, then the man is said to beleever, and to be indued with the habit of Faith.

This Faith is a quality, and as all other qualities, it admits of degrees. So that in respect of the subject, or persons in whom it is, it is more or less: For there is a strong Faith, and a weak Faith.

1. A strong Faith there is, that lays hold on the object without wavering; such as was in *Abraham*, *Rom.* 4. 20. He stagger'd not in the promise of God through unbelief,

Heb. 11. 1.

ὑπόστασις
ἐλπίδος.

but was strong in Faith. Such was in the woman of *Canaan*, *Matth.* 15. 28. *O woman great is thy faith.* And happy are they upon whom God bestows these gifts: For this faith is the comfortable substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen, *Heb.* 11. 1. For to what we hope for and yet enjoy not, faith gives a being and subsistence: and what things are so far out of our reach that they are invisible, unreasonable, impossible to the sense and understanding; yet faith is the evidence, it makes us as clearly discern them, and understand them, and as assuredly believe them, as if for them we had the greatest evidence in the world. But this strong faith is in few.

2. There is then a weak faith, or a lower degree of faith, which weakness lies sometimes in the apprehension of the Object, when a man knows not all that he should know. Sometimes again in the Subject, when a man cannot apply unto himself the promises without wavering and doubting. This our Saviour likens to a grain of mustard seed, *Matth.* 17. 20. This was in the Disciples, *Matth.* 14. 31. *O thou of little faith, and they beg an increase of it* *Luke* 17. 5. *Lord increase our faith.*

And yet this little faith is of the same nature with the other: and though it have not the same comfort, yet it may do the same work, justify, and make happy, because to this our Saviour hath made the promise, *Matth.* 5. 6. *Blessed are they which hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be satisfied.* And again it is written of him, *a bruised Reed shall he not break, and smoking Flax he will not quench*, *Matth.* 12. 20. That is, he will not quench, and put out, rather he will cherish, keep in, and increase the least sparkles of faith and hope.

Now whether this faith be true or no, is thus discerned.

1. By an earnest, serious, and constant desire, proceeding from a contrite heart, not so much of salvation, as of reconciliation, or to be at peace with God through Christ, they hunger after righteousness, *Matth.* 5. 6. Whence the act of the Patriarchs faith is commended for this, *Heb.* 11. 13.

αἰτία.

ἀπαλάμφοι, they kissed, saluted, or embraced the promises, and the promise made to them, was of the womans seed, which was Christ, who was to reconcile all things in Col. 1. 20. Heaven and in Earth.

2. By the influence it hath upon our lives, conforming the whole man to the discipline of Jesus Christ, which the Apostle calls *Rom. 16. 26. The obedience of*. For there is a dead faith which is separated from a holy life, and this justifies no man: and there is a living faith, which works by love, *Gal. 5. 6.* or faith keeping the Commandements of God, which alone is powerful to salvation. Now with this faith it is that a Christian vows in his Baptism to believe.

Jam. 1. 17.
18, 19, 20.

2. *The Object. I believe the Articles of the Christian Faith.*

Act. 4. 12.
Mauh. 16. 16.

There is no attainment of salvation but through the only begotten Son of God, nor by him in an ordinary way, but by faith. And that we might know what to believe, the Church hath delivered unto us a Brief of our Faith: Thereupon it follows, that the Articles thereof are necessary Principles for all men in Baptism to subscribe to, whom the Church then receives into Christs School. These are the Principles of our Religion: and as all other

a That there was at Baptism a profession of faith made, is evident by these testimonies. *Tertul. de Baptis. cap. 6. Cum autem subscribis* [sc. personis] & testatio fidei, & sponso salutis pignerentur. Et de *Specul. cap. 4. Quum aquam ingressi Christianam fidem in legis sue verba profiteremur*, to which of question he alludes de *Corona Militis cap. 3. Dehinc ter mergitatur*, amplius aliquid respondentes, quam Dominus in Evangelio determinavit.

Cyp. Epist. 70. edit. Pamuel. Sed & ipsa interrogatio, qua fit in Baptismo, testis est veritatis. Et in Ep. 75. ad Magnum. Quod si aliquis illud apponit, ut dicat eandem Novatianum legem tenere, eodem Symbolo quo & nos baptizare, eundem nosse Deum patrem, eundem filium Christum, eundem spiritum sanctum ac propter hoc usurpare eam potestatem baptizandi, quod videatur interrogatione Baptismi à nobis non discrepare, sciat, &c. & Ep. Formul. apud Cyprian. Numquid & hoc Stephanus, & qui illi consentiunt comprobant, maxime cui nec symbolum Trinitatis, nec interrogatio legitima, nec Ecclesiastica defuit? and two or three lines before, baptizaret quoque multos usitata & legitima verba interrogationis usurpans ut nihil discrepare ab Ecclesiastica regula videretur.

Cyril. Hierosol. Cat. 1. Mystag. Tunc admonebaris ut diceres credo in patrem, & filium & spiritum sanctum.

Hieron. contra Lucifer. Cum solenne sit in lavacro post Trinitatis confessionem interrogare, Credis in sanctam Ecclesiam? credis remissionem peccatorum? &c. and again, ad Heliodorum, Recordare tyrocinii cui diem quo Christo in Baptismate conscriptus in sacramenti verba jurasti.

Prin-

Principles in other Arts are taken for granted, so must these upon Gods Revelation. We are to embrace them, to hold them for undoubted Truths, reverently to admire them, neither to argue nor to dispute them, but to give unto them that assent, which the Oracles of God require.

1 Tim. 1. 3, 4.

Other confessions, as that of *Nice*, and *Athanasius*, &c. are received of the Church, not as new Creeds, but rather as expositions of this old. They add nothing to it, but explain some Articles, that either were depraved, or else ill understood by some Hereticks.

Them. 2. 2. q.

1. art. 9.

These Articles in a strict sense are the object of our faith, or that which we are to believe. And the whole is usually called *Symbolum Apostolicum*, The Apostles Creed.

These Articles in a strict sense are the object of our faith, or that which we are to believe. And the whole is usually called *Symbolum Apostolicum*, The Apostles Creed.

1. *Apostolicum*.

1. Either for that the Apostles were the Authors of it, being composed by themselves after they had received the Holy Ghost, and before they departed from *Jerusalem* to preach the Gospel to all Nations. *Cyprian* or rather *Ruffin*, in *Expos. Symboli Apostol. Hieron. ad Pamach. Magdeb. sent. 2* Col 66. *Baron. tom. 1. Aret. tom. in Loc. Sands* in his travels. pag. 185. from the Tradition of the Christians there, makes mention of the house in which the Apostles held the first Council, and composed the Creed.

In lib. 1. cap. 2.
Tertul. de
prescrip. c. 21.
Isidor. de Eccl.
lib. 2. 3.

2. Or else because it is an abridgement of the Gospel, and of the Apostles Doctrine, which was collected out of their Writings taught by them to the Church, and the Church hath delivered through all ages, *Angel. conf. Art. 8. Calv. Instit. lib. 2. cap. 16.*

Amb. ser. 38.
Leo. ep. 13. ad
Fulcher. Aug.

And it consists of 12 Articles and joynts, and the learned have assigned one to every one of the Apostles: So much *Ruffin* or *Cyprian* intimates in the fore cited place: And *Aretius* moved by the Tradition so reckons them.

Howsoever it was, this is certain, that there ever was in the Church a set Form of Faith, and this self same, for ought any man can prove to the contrary. That they had a Rule, is evident: first by the testimony of *Irenaeus*, lib. 1. cap. 3. For having in the second cap. delivered almost

this one Rule constant in the Church to have done it by.
Occum. in Loc. Neither are these Texts following in vain alledged to prove that it was so, 2 *Tim.* 1. 13. Hold fast the form of sound words, ὡς πάλαι ἦσαν, as it were an example delineated and set before him, which in the former verse he calls παρακαθήκη *depositum*, a rule deposited, and left in his hand. And again ὡς πάλαι ἦσαν ἐν παραδόσει τῶν πατέρων, *Rom.* 6. 17. Observe that the Apostle calls it τύπη, which the Greek scholia glosses ἔργον καὶ κανὼν the bound and rule, and saith that it was delivered. But more plainly, *Rom.* 12. 6, *If any man prophesiet him do it.* καὶ ἀναλογίαν πίστεως. The word signifies rather *rationem*, *convenientiam*, *congruentiam*. There is a proportion, and such an analogy as relates to somewhat that is certain and drawn into a Rule. The meaning then of the Apostle is, that he that prophesies must either teach according to the Scripture, which is the rule of Faith, or according to the Apostles Creed, which is the brief of that Rule; and why he may not allude to this last, I see not.

Beza in loc. Ro. 12. 6. πο-
test. τῆς ἀνα-
λογίας voca-
bulum 2. Er.
pro convenien-
tia seu congru-
entia quadam
 vel pro eo quod antea ἡσέδοι vocaret. Harum igitur interpretationum si priorem se-
 quaris, significat Apostolum verum Canonem Prophetia posuisse, i. e. interpretationis
 Scripturarum vera, à falsa discernenda: nempe si ad Christianae fidei axiomata
 ἀνέστη a exigantur Symbolo comprehensa ad Apostolum vocant, & quod jam inde ab
 initio Evangel. prædicationis veluti Evang. Epitome scriptum fuit; ideoque norma
 & regula fidei merito à Tertul. vocatur.

*Cypri. in Ex-
 pos. Symb.*

Now the reason why the Apostles delivered the Christian faith in this short sum, is thought to be this, A command they received to preach the Gospel, over all the world; to which purpose they were to disperse themselves, that therefore they, and those they taught and sent, might agree in and constantly teach one and the same doctrine, before their dispersion they agreed upon this form as a rule, and a square to examine all doctrines by, and a means to suppress all Schisms and Heresies.

Symbolum.

Cyp. l. cit.

And it is called *Symbolum* from συμβάλλεσθαι, that signifies to put together, and to cist in money to make up a sum, or reckoning. Hence the word *Symbolum*, signifies a
 shot

Shot, a Badge, a Collation, or the word given to the Soldiers in war. *Cyp. l. cit.*

1. A Shot, or Collation, because every particular Apostle did cast in, and collate his Article to make up this Summ, at least the whole doth arise out of their common writings. *Euseb. Emif. Hom. 1. de. Symb.*

2. Or else because this should be *nota tesseræ, indicium*, a badge, a word. For as a Soldier is known in the field by the word, to what side he doth belong: so those who maintained the truth of the Gospel, and had obliged themselves as it were *Sacramento Militari* to fight under Christs banner, and to maintain the Truth, should be known from all unbelievers, and mis-believers: so that if any false brother should creep in, *interrogatus Symbolum, prodatur se an sit hostis, vel socius*: being asked his Creed, upon the account given, he should shew himself whether he was a friend or an enemy. *Cyp. loc. cit.*

3. All the Articles of the Christian Faith.

[*All*] It lies not then in a mans power, which Articles he will chuse to believe, and which to disbelieve. For a man professeth in his Baptism to believe, *All*.

This *Athanasius* hath thus expressed. Whosoever will be saved, before all things it is necessary, that he hold the *Catholic* Faith: Which Faith, except a man keeps whole and entire, without doubt he shall perish everlastingly.

1. Then a man may not be an Heretick in disbelieving any Article here set down, in which all Heretical sects are faulty.

2. Nor he may not impose any new Articles, as necessarily to be believed, which is the heavy yoke of *Rome*. All these are to be believed, and these onely, the rest are more than need.

3. Of Obedience. *That I should keep Gods holy Will and Commandements, and walk in the same all the days of my life.*

Psal. 119. 105.

Ephes. 5. 2.

Luke 1. 7. 5.

The third thing promised in our Baptism is *Obedience* which, if right,

1. Gods Will and Commandements must be the Rule.

2. We must walk in the same.

3. It must be all the days of our life.

1. In Obedience. *deterius subjiciatur meliori*: Our reason, which is often but an ill Counsellour, must submit and yield to a higher and better Guide. Our actions must conform to the Divine Will and Wisdom, which is the original of all Sanctity and Goodness. Neither is it enough that we conform in the external execution, for besides the act done, our heart must be made a *Holocaust*, and chuse the duty because God commands it.

2. This his Will must be our walk, for we are to walk in the same.

1. That we erre not.

2. That we stand not still.

3. This must be our continual Walk: serve we must in Righteousness and Holiness all the days of our life, Luke 1. 75.

Our Obedience then must have these three conditions, it must be

1. *Recta*, well regulated by his Will, Rom. 12. 2.

2. *Operosa & molens aliquid*, not lazy Obedience, but doing, stirring, and walking, Mat. 7. 21. James 1. 22.

3. Constant, all our days. A good man is well compared to a Cube, or Dye, that hath all sides square, being fast settled, and not like a Reed shaken with every wind.

Luke 1. 75.

Mark 13. 13.

Q. *Dost thou think that thou art bound to believe and do as thy Godfathers and Godmothers have promised for thee?*

Ans. *Yes, and by Gods help so I will, &c.*

This answer consists of many particulars.

1. An

1. An ingenious confession of the Obligation, *Yes verily.*
2. A profession of Faith and Obedience, yet with a necessary caution, *By Gods help, By Gods help so I will.*
3. A hearty rendition of thanks. *I heartily thank my heavenly Father.*
4. The motive to this thankfulness, *because he hath called me to this state of Salvation through Jesus Christ our Saviour.*
5. A petition for Grace and perseverance in our Christian profession.

1. *And I pray to God to give me his Grace.*

2. *That I may continue in the same to my lives end.*

Thus far of the Preface to the Catechism.

Now follows the body of the Book, in which are contained Four things, according to the Four main duties required of a Christian,

1. Faith. 2. Obedience. 3. Prayer.

4. The receiving of the Sacraments.

Which being his main duties, and no man being able to do any duty rightly and certainly, without a Rule to direct him: That a Christian should not want a Rule for his directions in every one of these duties, it pleased the Church to set him a Rule, by which he is to try every one of these.

1. The Rule for his Faith, is the Creed.

2. The Rule for his Obedience, the Decalogue.

3. The Rule for his Prayers, the *Pater noster*, or *Lords Prayer*.

4. The Rule for the Sacraments, the Doctrine here delivered.

The intent then of this Catechism is to deliver these Rules, and to explain them easily and briefly, that no person pretend ignorance, or be to seek what to believe, or what to do in the matter of Religion.

1. *Of the Creed, or Rule of Faith.*

Catech. *Reharse the Articles of thy belief.*

E 2

Ans.

Ans. I believe in God, the Father Almighty, maker of
Heaven and Earth, and in Jesus Christ, &c.

The first duty required of a Christian is, that he beleeve. For it is not possible that he should obey the Commandments of God, or pray unto him, or expect the performance of any promise from him, or desire by the Sacraments to have them sealed to him, except he hath faith, trust, affiance, and confidence in God. Whence the Apostle saith, *Heb. 11. 6. Without faith it is impossible to please God, for he that comes to God, must believe, that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.* As then in Religion, we must begin with Faith, so doth the Catechism with the Rule of Faith, sets that first down, and then briefly explains it.

Mar. 7. 21.

Rom. 2. 14.

James 1. 21.

John 13. 17.

But here it must not be passed over with silence, that both the Catechizer and the Catechized turn the words into works, and make every Article Practical. That is, that the knowledge thereof float not in the brain, or the words slide not only from the tongue, but that they sink down into, and warm the heart, and render it apt and ready to the practise of some duty. More plainly, that we know not only what the words signify, but to do somewhat that is agreeable to our belief.

Of the parts of the Creed.

Zanch. de
Symb. Apost.

Some make Three, some Four parts of the Creed, the matter is not great, for it comes to the same purpose. Both being done *docendi causa*, for the ease of the Teacher, and the Scholar.

But the whole Twelve Articles may be reduced to these Two heads

1. The First being concerning God.
2. The Second of the Church.

- ## 2. The Second of the Church.

It handleth { 1. In General, *I believe in God.*
 { of God { 2. In special of { 1. God the Father.
 { { 2. God the Son.
 { { 3. God the Holy Ghost
 { of the Church, *I believe the Catholic Church.*
 Three

2. In special of κ 1. God the Father.

2. God the Son.

3. God the Holy Ghost

of the Church. *I believe the Catholic Church.*

Three

Three persons there are in the Holy Trinity, and these have their distinct actions, which yet are so terminated in each one, that the other are not excluded, but rather included: for, *Opera Trinitatis ad extra sunt indivisa*. The works of the Trinity to all outward acts, are not divided.

1. The first act is Creation, and that is attributed to the Father, in the first Article. We thus expound it in the Catechism, *I believe in God the Father, who hath made me, and all the world*, or as it is in the *Nicene Creed*, all things visible and invisible.

2. The second Act is redemption, and that is attributed to God the Son, in the Six following Articles, which describe unto us the Person and the Office of this our Redeemer.

1. His Person, *Sub speciebus*, God and Man. 1. God, for he was his only Son. 2. Man, being incarnate, conceived of the Holy Ghost, born of the Virgin *Mary*.

2. His Office in general, to be a Saviour, Jesus, and Christ anointed to that end: a King, a Priest, a Prophet. To his Priestly Office the Articles that concern his passion do peculiarly belong; because he offered himself that he might be a propitiatory Sacrifice for the sin of the whole world. To his Kingly and Prophetical the four last, for he overcame Hell as a King, and rose as a King, and ascended in triumph as a King, and sits on the right hand of God as a King, and shall judge the world as a King. And when he was ascended up on high, he gave gifts unto men, or men endued with gifts, some Apostles, some Prophets, some Evangelists, some Pastors and Teachers, for the perfecting of the Saints, for the work of the Ministry, for the edifying of the body of the Church, which is the Prophets Office. In these Six Articles then is taught us in brief the History and Mystery of our Redemption; which the Catechism hath thus explained. *I believe in God the Son, who hath redeemed me and all mankind*.

3. The third Act is Sanctification, and that is attributed to the Holy Ghost, in the *Nicene Creed*, and in the Ca-

1st. 53. 10.

Heb. 7. 27.

Heb. 2. 9, 17.

Rev. 1. 18.

Ephes. 4. 11,
12.

Rom. 8. 10, 11.

techism in these words, *And I beleeve in the Holy Ghost, who sanctifieth me, and all the elect people of God.*

2. These elect people of God are in the Creed called *The Holy Catholick Church*, in which there is the Communion of Saints, collected by his Spirit, Sanctified by his Spirit. And about the benefits conferred on them, the remainder of the Creed is spent. Which benefits are,

- | | |
|---------------------|---|
| 1. In this life, | } <i>Remission of sins,</i>
<i>Resurrection of the body, and</i>
<i>Life everlasting.</i> |
| 2. After this life, | |

This is in general, the summary Contents of our Creed, and by it we may be put in mind,

1. To try our Faith, *John 11. 25, 29, 27. 2 Cor. 13. 5. Examine your selves, whether you be in the faith.*
2. Then upon tryal to make it our cognizance and note of distinction from all hypocrites and enemies to Christ, *Luk 8. 13.*
3. By perceiving the weakness of our faith, to beg an increase of it, as did the Disciples, *Luk 17. 5.*
4. To remember that we vowed to believe all this in Baptism.
5. That this in all tentations and pressures must be our shield, *Ephes. 5. 16. Mat. 15. from 21 to 28.*
6. Lastly, It should put us in mind to be thankful unto God for our Creation, Redemption, Sanctification, and Reception into the Church, by which we come to be partakers of the following benefits, viz. Remission of sins, and Resurrection to everlasting life.

Now follows the Exposition of every Article.

Quest. Which is the first Article of the Creed?

Ans. I beleeve in God the Father Almighty, maker of Heaven and Earth.

The Explication.

In this Article we are to consider,

1. The

1. The Act, I believe, *Credo*, which gives name to the Creed.
2. The Object of our Faith, God. *I believe in God*,
3. The Description of God, as it relates to the first person.
 1. A Father.
 2. Almighty.
 3. Maker of Heaven and Earth.

1. *Of the Act, I believe.*

1. *Credo*. I [believe] The person I, brings the Faith home, and makes it particular, and thus the phrase runs in all the other Articles, putting us in mind, that it is our own Faith (when we are of age to profess it) which will be beneficial to us, and not the Faith of any other person. Rom. 4. 3. *Abraham believed God, and that was counted to him for righteousness.* To him in a restrained sense.

The belief here, is not a bare confession, an opinion, or an assent. The phrase imports more, for it is not *Credo Deo*, I believe God, though it requires that also, a man being bound to believe, that whatever command God hath given must be obeyed, whatever judgement he hath threatened, shall be inflicted, whatsoever promise he hath made, shall be performed: But as I said, the phrase imports more, because *Credo in Deum*, is, as if I said, I put my whole Trust, Hope, and Confidence in him; I relye upon him: I embrace him for my God, and I adhere to him. *Hab. 1. 12. Art not thou from everlasting, O Lord my God, mine Holy One?*

2. *The Object, God.*

By this word is signified to us the Essence of the Deity, who *Exod. 3. 14.* is called *Jehovah*, I am. For whereas all other things are subject to change, we can say of them, they are not what they have been, or shall not be what they are: he evermore is the same, and his years shall not fail. This word then intimates unto us, that he is of a Nature.

1. Eternal

1. Eternal. 2. Immortal, or the living God.
 Rom. 1. 20. 3. Immutable: having a Being in and from himself,
 1 Tim. 1. 17. which is the original and beginning of all Being, *Alt* 17.
 Heb. 1. 11, 12, 28,

Hence then we are to believe,

1. That there is a God. Besides Scripture, reason doth sufficiently prove it, and to this the Apostle appeals, *Rom.* 1. 19, 20. *Alt.* 14. 15. *Alt.* 17 from. 24. to 29.
2. That this God is but one: the Scriptures declare this expressly, *Deut.* 6. 4. *Hear O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord,* 1 Cor. 8. 5. *There is no other God but one.* And reason concludes it also, because there can be but one infinite, independent, and omnipotent cause.
3. That yet in this unity of the Godhead, there is a Trinity of persons; the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. 1 John 5. 7. *There be three that bear witness in Heaven. The Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost.* Mat. 28. 19. *Go ye therefore and teach all Nations, Baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost,* Gal. 4. 6. and he that doubts let him go to *Jordan,* Mat. 3. 16, 17.

Quest. *How are these persons distinguished?*

Ans. Not in the Essence of the Godhead, for their Essence is one and the same. *These three are one,* 1 John 5. 7. Nor yet in their Dignity and Attributes; all being Co-equal, Co-essential, Co-eternal. All uncreate, incomprehensible, Almighty.

The distinction then is, that under this Notion of a Person, this one God is made known to us.

1. The First Person under the Notion of the Father.
2. The Second Person under the Notion of the Son.
3. The third, under the Notion of the Holy Ghost.

Then again they are distinguished by their internal properties.

1. Αγενεσία.
2. Ἀίδιότης
3. Ἀκρότευσις.

1. Not begotten belongs to the Father. He is of none.
2. Begotten belongs to the Son, *Psal.* 2. 7.
3. Proceeding belongs to the Holy Ghost, for he is the

the Spirit of God, 1 Cor. 2. 10. and the Spirit of Christ, Rom. 8. 9.

3. They are distinguished by their manner of working outwardly; For

1. The Father Creates, Gen. 1. 1. Mat. 2. 10.

2. The Son redeems, Gal. 3. 13. & 4. 5.

3. The Holy Ghost illuminates and sanctifies, 2 Pet. 1. 21.

These things all the persons work equally and inseparably in respect of the cause and effect: for what one doth all do. Yet in congruity we attribute a distinct act in respect of the order and object.

In a word, this is a mystery revealed by God, therefore to be believed by us, and not curiously searched, to be adored, rather than to be explored. To search is rashness, to believe is piety, to know is life. An object for our faith, not for our reason. The reason of our belief in this, being Gods revelation. So that he that will be curious and inquisitive about it, must remember what is written, Prov. 25. 27. *Qui scrutator est majestatis oprimitur a gloria.* It is not good to eat much honey; for men to search their own glory, is not glory.

Scrutari temeritas est, credere pietas est, noscere vita est. Bein.

3. Father. I believe in God the Father.

Father is his first Attribute. And he is the Father of Christ by Nature, of his Elect by Adoption, of all men and all things by Creation. As in a family, we call him *Paterfamilias*, the Father from whom the whole family is derived, and by whose Counsel and Command the whole house is ordered and governed: so also in this great house of the universe, we call God the Father, because it proceeds from him, as the first author and fountain, and is yet ordered and governed by him, as the great Supervisor and Provider. *Is not he thy Father that hath bought thee, hath he not made thee, and established thee?* Deut. 32. 6. Mat. 5. 48. Rom. 8. 15. Under this term is taught us his Mercy, Goodness, and Providence.

Rom. 15. 6.
Heb. 1. 2.
John 20. 17.
Jer. 31. 9.

F

4. Almighty

4. Almighty, Παροικατος.

His next attribute is Almighty, which in the Greek is *παροικατος*, a word, that signifies not only power, but right of dominion, so that by it we learn Two things.

1. His unlimited power or omnipotency ; that he is able to do what he will, and more than he will too : a Father we have that is able to defend us from our enemies, and in that respect far superior to our earthly Parents, that would defend their Children, but cannot. If he will he can.
2. That this his power is not violent, or like that of a Tyrant, but Fatherly, and of right belonging to him. He is absolute Lord of Heaven and Earth, and hath given this power to his Son, *Mat. 28. 18.*

And this term is chosen, and set in the head of the Creed, because the things that follow, are most of them so transcendent, and so far pass our capacity and belief, that if at any time there should be in us *an evil heart of unbelief*, so that we stagger in the promises, we might have an Eye to this word *Almighty*, and remember that he is an Omnipotent Father, a powerful Lord and King, and can do what he will in Heaven and Earth. This was the foundation of our Father Abraham's Faith. *He staggered not in the promises, but remembered that he was able.* *Rom. 4. 21.* And the Apostle assures the Jews of their restitution upon this ground, if they abide not in their unbelief, they shall be grafted in : *For God is able to graft them in again,* *Rom. 11. 23, 25.*

5. Maker of Heaven and Earth.

This is Gods third Attribute. 1. Maker. Creator it is in the original, and that signifies that he made the world of nothing, or of no former pre-existent matter. For *Creation* is *ex Nihilo*.

By Heaven and Earth we are to understand themselves, and all creatures contained in them, Angels, Stars, Elements, Mixt bodies of all sorts, Plants, Birds, Beasts, Fishes, Men,

Men, with all the Natural properties and faculties with which they are and were then impowred in the first Six days Creation, *Gen. 1.*

2. Because to make is to little purpose, except the Maker shall keep up what he hath made. Therefore God also is said to be the Maker of Heaven and Earth, because as he framed them by his power, so he provides for them out of his goodness, preserves them in their essence and existence, out of his All-sufficiency, and orders and governs out of his wisdom, all things in Heaven and Earth.

*Act. 17. 28.
Mat. 6. 25. and
10. 29, 30, 31.*

1. The Creation then sets forth his power.
2. His Providence sets forth his Love and Goodness.
3. His conservation of all things in this constant course, his All-sufficiency.
4. His ordering, guiding, disposing, and governing of the whole, his great and unspeakable wisdom.

The practical part of this Article.

The influence that this Article may have upon our lives and practice is in a word all the Duties of the first Commandment; For from hence will flow very kindly our Faith, our Hope, our Love, our Fear, our Confidence, our Honour, our Worship, our Prayer, our Praise and Thanksgiving, which I thus illustrate, by applying the several duties to the Essence of God, and his Attributes.

*Dr. Gort Ham-
mond, pr. Cat.*

1. He is God, and that is the ground of our Faith. For God cannot lye, saith Balaam, Numb. 23. 19. As he is *verus Deus*, True God, so he is *verax Deus*, a God of Truth: And this his Truth and Veracity is the reason we believe what he hath spoken.

2. This God is *Jehovah*, I am. Our being then, we must know we have from him, *In him we live, move, and have our being*, *Act. 17. 28. τὸ ζῆνός ἐστιν.*

3. His Deity is the ground of our adoration, worship, Prayer, *Psal. 95. 6. O come let us worship, and fall down, and kneel before the Lord our Maker, for he is the Lord our God.*

4. This God is our Father: we must then be dutiful Children. Fear, Love, Reverence, Honour him: Honour

thy Father and Mother. *If I be a Father, where is my Honour, ?* Mal. 1. 6.

5. He is Almighty : therefore we are to Trust, to Relye upon him, to hope in him. For with God nothing is impossible, *Mat. 19. 26. Mat. 3. 9. Mar. 10. 27.*

6. This Almighty is *παις τοῦ πατρὸς*, he hath absolute Paternal, Regal Power, *2 Cor. 6. 18.* Therefore we must submit unto him, obey him, be content to be ruled by him; For, *Rebellion is as the sin of Witchcraft. 1 Sam. 15. 23. Let every soul be subject to the higher power. Rom. 13. 1.*

7. He is the Maker of Heaven and Earth, by which, as I said, is set forth his power, his all-sufficiency, his goodness, his wisdom, his providence.

1. His all sufficiency, *Gen. 17. 1.* bids us relye upon his promises for what is fit or necessary for us, and not to distrust our selves with care, *Mat. 6. from 25 to the end.*

2. Lastly, his goodness, wisdom, providence, &c. is the ground of all our prayers, petitions, praise, and thanksgiving we send up to him. *Rev. 4. 11. Thou Lord art worthy to receive glory, and honour, and power, for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.*

*Of the second part of the Creed which concerns
Christ, or Mans Redemption by Christ.*

From God we have our being, from Christ our well-being : from God by Creation : from Christ by Redemption : and better it had been for us, not to have been than not to have been redeemed. Of which Mercy, that we might take a particular view, in the six following Articles of our Creed, is set before us the person of the Redeemer, and how he redeemed us. The Articles are these.

1. And (believe) in Jesus Christ his only Son our Lord.

3. Who was conceived of the Holy Ghost, born of the Virgin Mary.

3. He suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead and buried.

4. He

4. He descended into Hell, the third day he rose again from the dead.

5. He ascended into Heaven, and sitteth on the right hand of God, &c.

6. From thence he shall come to judge the quick and the dead.

All these Articles are thus summed up in the Catechism, That Jesus Christ redeemed me, and all mankind. More particularly we are to consider in them,

1. The description of the person of the Redeemer, whose Person and Office is set forth under Four Names,

1. Jesus. 2. Christ. 3. His onely Son. 4. Our Lord.

2. What he did for mans } Humbled.
Redemption, that he was } Exalted.

1. Humbled he was in his Incarnation, of which we have here Two principles: First, The *Holy Ghost*. Secondly, The *Virgin Mary*.

1. His conception from the *Holy Ghost*. conceived by the *Holy Ghost*.

2. His Birth and Nativity from the *Virgin Mary*. Born of the *Virgin Mary*.

2. Humbled he was in his

1. Passion. He suffered under *Pontius Pilate*.

2. Crucifixion, being crucified and nailed to the Cross.

3. Death: For he died on the Cross, He was Dead.

4. Burial. To the grave he descended, was buried for us.

To which his Burial, some refer the following words: He descended to Hell: Others make it the first step of his Honour, Conquest and Triumph.

2. But he that was thus far humbled, was again exalted, because he *Humbled himself to death, even to the death of the Cross, therefore hath God exalted him, and given him a Name above every Name, &c.* Phil. 2. 8, 9. Isa. 53. 12. And this his exaltation is expressed in the following Articles. Psal. 110. 7. claritas humilitatis premii. Mat. 28.

Act. 1.
 Heb. 1. 13.
 Psal. 110. 1.
 Act. 17. 3.
 Joh. 5. 22.

1. His Resurrection; He rose again the third day.
2. His Ascension; He ascended to Heaven.
3. His Glorification: He sits on the right hand of God.
4. His Return in Glory. He shall come to judge the quick and the dead:

This is the sum of that part of the Creed, that belongs to our Saviour and Redeemer Jesus Christ, I shall now more fully explain every particular Article.

1. The first Article concerning Christ, *viz And in Jesus Christ his only Son our Lord.*

In Christ we are to consider {
 1. His Person consisting of Two Natures.
 2. His Offices.

1. Of the Person of Christ.

Rom. 9. 5.
 John 1. 14.
 John 1. 14.

In the Person of Christ there was an union of Two Natures, the Divine and Humane. The Divine, for he was His only Son, the Humane, for he was Christ, that is, anointed. *Joh. 1. 14. The Word was made flesh*, and his Name was *Immanuel, God with us*. Mat. 1. 23.

And this assumption of the Humanity, and joyning of it with the Deity made him a fit person to be our Mediator and Redeemer.

Gal. 1. 4. 5.

1: The Divine Nature was necessary, that so his satisfaction might be of an infinite merit, and proportionable to our offence. *Heb. 9. 14.* God redeemed the Church with his blood.

2. The humane Nature was necessary; that he might perform perfect obedience to the Law, and dye for our sins, which the Godhead could not: God redeemed indeed, but it was with blood, and then he must be man, for God had no blood to shed.

2 Tim. 1. 15.
 Luk. 2. 11.

2. Of Christ's Office.

His Office in General is to save: to that end he came into

into the world, and to that end he took the Name,

1. *Jesus.*

Jesus is an Hebrew Name, and it signifies a Saviour, *Thou shalt call his Name Jesus, for he shall save his people from their sins.* Mat. 1. 21. Tit. 2. 14.

To save and redeem from sin, implies three things.

1. To obtain pardon for sin, both from guilt and punishment, and reconciling sinners to God; and thus Jesus was a Saviour, for he obtained our pardon, freed us from the wrath of God, and reconciled man to God.

2 Cor. 5. 19.
Rom. 5. 10, 11.
1 Thes. 1. 10.
Act. 10. 43.

2. To deliver from the slavery and dominion of sin, and to give power to repent for it, and to mortifie it: and thus also he saves his people from their sins. Because in all his people, by the power of his Spirit, he so weakens, and mortifies sin, that it shall not reign in their mortal bodies.

Col. 3. 35.
Rom. 6. 5, 6.
and 8. 2.
2 Cor. 7. 1.
Ga. 2. 20.

3. To perfect Salvation, and save in another world; and thus also he saves his people, his purpose being to bring them to Salvation after this life.

Ephes. 1. 3.
John 3. 35.
2 Pet. 1. 3, 11.
1 Pet. 1. 4.

The Practical part, or that influence, which this Salvation purchased by Jesus, ought to have upon us.

1. It is proper to stir us up to be affectionate and grateful to this our Saviour, that being the only Son of God, and would yet take our Nature upon him that he might be our *Jesus*.

Luk. 1. 46, 68.
and 2. 13.

2. It should beget in us a just hatred of sin, that brought God from Heaven to expiate, and dye for it.

Psal. 119. 114.
Ephes. 4. 22,
23, 24.

3. It is most proper to enforce Repentance, and amendment of life. This being the end of Christs death to redeem us from all iniquity, and to purifie to himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

Titus 2. 14.

2. *Christ.*

The next title that is given our Saviour, is Christ, which in the Hebrew is *Messiah*, signifying Anointed, and it intimates

mat es

Psal. 2. 6.
Psal. 110. 4.
Deut. 18. 28,
and 15.
Act. 3. 22.

mates the three Offices, to which men were admitted by the Ceremony of *Anointing*. The King, the Priest, the Prophet were anointed among the Jews. That then our Saviour was *Christus*, that is *Unctus*, Anointed, shews that he was to be all these, A King, a Priest, and a Prophet, to his people.

But here observe, that this *Unction* was not performed with Material Oil, but by the Holy Ghost. *Luk* 4. 18. *Heb*. 1. 9. and with this *Oyl of gladness*, as it is called, *Psal*. 45. 8. he was anointed above his fellows, both *extensive*, and *intensive*.

1. First, *extensive*, because the three Offices met in his person, which were never conjoynted in any other. *Aaron* was an Anointed Priest, *Saul* an Anointed King, *Elisa* an Anointed Prophet, *Melchizedech*, King and Priest, *David* King and Prophet, but none but he all these, King, Priest, and Prophet.

Ephes. 4. 7.
Col. 1. 19.
and 2. 9.

2. *Intensive*, that is, in the intensest, and highest degree, that possibly this *Unction* might be had, and faculty to use it to all effects and purposes, to which Grace doth or can extend: and thus Christ, and Christ alone did partake of this unction, or Gifts of the Holy Ghost. For to every one of us is given Grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ: from him we receive grace for grace. But he was full of grace and truth, *Joh*. 1. 14. and in him dwelt all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. *Col*. 1. 9. Because in his person there was the grace of Union, therefore was in it the the grace of *Unction*.

The condition of man without Christ, is very lamentable, and this ariseth from 1. Ignorance. 2. Disorder. 3. Guilt. But by the Offices of Christ, there ariseth an Antidote for these three.

Heb. 3. 1.
Mal. 3. 1.
1 Cor. 1. 24.
Col. 2. 3.
Psal. 2. 6.
Dan. 2. 44.
Luk. 1. 36.
Col. 1. 20. 22.

1. His Prophetical Office is able to dispel our ignorance: for as a Prophet he doth illuminate and teach us knowledge.

2. His Regal Office is of Power to remove all Disorder: as a King he can set all right, and keep all right.

3. His Priesthood was ordained to remove our Guilt.

For

For it was the Priests duty to intercede, to make an atonement for, and to reconcile God and the people.

Of each of these a little more.

2 Cor. 5. 15.
Numb. 16. 46.
Jam. 5. 14. 15.
Hab. 7. 25.

1. Of Christs Prophetical Office.

The Prophets Office was, and is to teach and open to man the will of God. And this Office Christ did, and doth yet perform unto his Church, perfectly revealing what is the will of God about our Salvation. Whence *Dent.* 18. 15. he is called the Prophet. The Apostle of our profession. *Heb.* 3. 1. *The Angel of the Covenant.* *Mal.* 3. 1. *The wisdom of God.* *1 Cor.* 1. 24. *And the Treasury of all wisdom and knowledge.* *Col.* 2. 3. Now this he hath done three ways.

1. By the promulgation of the Gospel. *Luk.* 4. 18.
2. By his interpretation of the Law, in his Sermon upon the Mount. *Mat.* 5. ad 8.
3. By sending Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Doctors, Teachers.. *Ephes.* 4. 11.
1 Cor. 12. 28.

Our Duties to this Office are.

1. Faith to believe what he hath taught.
2. Obedience to his Sermon, and the whole word of God: subduing proud reason to the Doctrine of Christ. *Rom.* 1. 16. 17.
Luk. 14. 35. & 9. 35.
3. To have all his Ministers in great regard for their works sake. *Luk.* 10. 16.
Gal. 4. 14.
Phil. 2. 29. 30.

2. Of Christs Kingly Office.

The Kingdom of Christ is, by which he dispenseth and orders all things with authority and power, which belongs to mans salvation. *Psal.* 2. 6. *Dan.* 2. 44. *Luk.* 1. 36. And this his power, as a King, he shews,

1. By erecting and setting up his Throne in the hearts of his people, giving them grace to destroy and subdue every rebellious lust, and habit of sin, that it never reign there. *Heb.* 8. 10.
Jer. 31. 33.

2. By subduing Satan, and shortning his power. *Heb.* 2. 14. *I saw Satan fall from Heaven.* *Luk.* 10. 18.

3. By conquering death it self. *The last enemy to be destroyed.* 1 Cor. 15.

4. By erecting an universal power: 1. In respect of all ages. *Mat.* 22. 43, 44. 2. Over all men. *Deut.* 7. 14. 3. Over all creatures. *Ephes.* 1. 21, 22.

Ephes. 5. 24.

John 16. 24.

1 Tim. 6. 17.

James 5. 7.

Ephes. 6. 10.

12, &c.

Psal. 2. 11, 12.

Isai. 66. 2.

Phil. 2. 12.

Our Duties to his Kingly Office are,

1. That we be obedient faithful Subjects to this King.
2. That we trust and petition to him for our protection:
3. That we fight his battels against Sin and Satan.
4. That we pay him his tribute of honor and reverence.
5. That we tremble at his Word, his Threats, his Judgements.

3. Of Christs Priestly Office.

Christs Priestly Office consists in this, that he did expiate Gods anger, and reconcile us to God. *Col.* 1. 20. and 22. *Rom.* 5. 10. This his Priesthood was not legal. *but after the Order of Melchizedech.* *Heb.* 7. 17, 21. And this Office he executes.

1. By offering his soul a sacrifice for sin. *Isai.* 5. 3, 10.
2. By his intercession and praying for us. *Mat.* 16. *Joh.* 17.
3. By making an atonement for us, 1 *Joh* 2. 2.
4. By blessing us: and this blessing is the turning every one of us from our iniquities. *Acts* 3. 26.

Our Duties to this his Priestly Office.

Heb. 4. 16.

Phil. 3. 7.

John 5. 4.

1 Cor. 6. 1, 2.

Heb. 12. 15.

and 10, 25. *ad*

30.

1. To pray him to intercede for Pardon and Grace for us.
2. To account his Grace the greatest blessing.
3. To receive it, when it flows, with humble hearts.
4. To use his Grace to the end designed, *viz.* Reformation.
5. To expect no pardon from this our high-Priest, or eternal salvation, but upon the good use of his Grace.
6. That we bless God again, for blessing us, So did *Melchizedech*, *Gen.* 14. 19, 20.

3. *His only Son.*

That is Christs third Title in the Creed, by which we are to understand, that he was the eternal Son of God, not as all creatures are by Creation: nor as all the Elect people of God are, by Grace, and Adoption: but the only Son of God by eternal Generation. Co-eternal, Co-essential and Co-equal with the Father, and the Holy Ghost. *John* 1. 1, 14. *Rom.* 9 5. 1 *John* 5. 20. *Isai.* 9. 6. *Mich.* 5. 2. 2. *Heb.* 1. 3. *Phil.* 2. 6.

Very God of very God, begotten not made, being of one substance with the Father.

The Use for our comfort.

1. That being God, he is able to save to the uttermost. *Heb.* 7. 25.
2. That being his Son, he will adopt us, *Heb.* 2. 10.

4. *Our Lord.*

That is his fourth Title. And it is a name of power and Relation.

1. Of Sovereignty and Power, and so is a farther illustration of his Kingly Office, that he is exalted to the Throne, and therefore hath power to save. At his birth the Angel gives him this Title *Christ the Lord*, *Luke* 2. 11. And after his Resurrection *St Peter* tells the Jews, *Act* 5. 31. *That God hath exalted him with his right hand, to be a Prince and a Saviour.* Not a temporal Saviour, as other Princes, Lords, and Christs had been: but a Lord that *Heb.* 5. 6. brings everlasting Salvation.

1. A Lord able to save, *Heb.* 7. 25, 26, 27.

1. *a* Himself and others.

2. *b* The bodies and souls of his servants

3. *c* Not onely from Carnal but Ghostly enemies.

4. *d* Lastly, not from temporal calamities onely, but from sin.

2. A Lord able to give whatsoever he is Lord of.

1. He is Lord of life *Acts* 3. 15. And life he imparts,

a *Heb.* 10. 14.

b *Joh.* 6. 27.

39. 40.

c *Ephes.* 1. 20.

21. 22.

d *Col.* 2. 13.

14. 15.

2. He is Lord of Glory. 2. 8. And Glory he imparts.

3. He is Lord of Joy; and that he bestows, *Mat. 25. 21.*

2. And secondly, Lord is a name of Relation, for a Lord must have servants: and in this sense it may well be taken here; intimating that however he be the Lord Paramount and absolute; yet to all Christians he stands in a nearer Relation.

Not a Lord at large, but their peculiar, proper Lord.

Mat. 8. 29.

1 Cor. 1. 23.

Our Lord; not so to the Devils: For say they, *What have we to do with thee?* Not so to the unbelieving *Jews* or *Gentiles*: for to these *Jews* he was a *stumbling block*, and to these *Gentiles* *foolishness*. To Christians alone that call him and own him for their Lord and Master, to those I say which are called both *Greeks* and *Jews*, *Christ is the power of God, and wisdom of God.*

Yerf. 14.

The Uses of his Lordship.

1 Cor. 7. 23.

and *6. 19. 19.*

Mal. 1. 5.

1. That if he be our Lord, then we must be his Servants, obey his Commandements, and carry our selves as it becomes dutiful servants and subjects.

2. That we acknowledge his power to give Laws for the ordering of his Kingdom, House, Family, *1am. 4. 12: Isai. 9. 6. Isai. 33. 22.*

3. That we relye upon this Lord for Salvation, for Protection, for Deliverance, from all the enemies of our peace. *Luk 1. 71. Isai. 32. 1, 2.*

2. The Second Article concerning Christ.

who was conceived of the Holy Ghost.

Born of the Virgin Mary.

Luk 1. 35.

Mat. 1. 25.

Luk 2. 8.

In this Article is set down our Saviours Incarnation, of which,

e John 3. 16.

1 John 4. 9.

d Luk 1. 76,

77.

e Phil. 1. 11.

Ephes. 3. 5, 6.

1. The Efficient cause, was God.

2. *c* The *πρῶτον κίνητον*, or first moving cause, his good pleasure.

3. *d* The *αφορμή*, or the occasion, mans misery.

4. *e*. The Final, His own Glory, and mans Salvation.

This

This his Incarnation, was the assuming of flesh, of which there was a double Principle.

1. One in Heaven. The Holy Ghost.

2. The other on Earth. The Virgin *Mary*:

1. As he was Man, he was *αὐτὸς* had no Man for his Father, being not conceived after the ordinary manner of men; but by the secret power, and operations of the Holy Ghost, *Luk* 1. 35.

2. Yet when he became man, he had a Mother, descended lineally of the *a* seed of *David*, and she a *b* Virgin, *a* *Psalm* 132.
and so the Prophesie fulfilled. *Isai* 7. 14. *A Virgin shall* ^{11.}
conceive, and bring forth a Son *b. Je.* 31. 22.

c Our Nature was polluted with the Contagion of sin: *c* *Psalm* 51. 5.
that therefore this infection might not pass into Christ, *Ezek.* 16.
he would be conceived by the Holy Ghost, by whose Sanctity the Seed, which he took, might be purged from original corruption, *Luk* 1. 35.

Our Nature was again to be redeemed by the seed of the woman, as God hath promised, *Gen* 3. 17. and therefore he took flesh from the Virgins womb.

His conception by the Holy Ghost filled him with all Grace and Holiness, *Joh* 1. 16. *Full of Grace and Truth.*

His Nativity of the Virgin *Mary* made him subject to all humane infirmities, that are not sinful, *Heb.* 4. 15. & 5. 2.

This was the first step and degree of his debasement and humiliation, for *quid sublimius Deo? quid vilius carne?* wear higher than God? what more mean than flesh? and yet the *Word* would be made *Flesh*.

The Duties we learn from it are

1. Joy. *Behold I bring you glad tidings, of great joy.* *Luk* 2. 10. 11. *Isai.* 9. 3.

2. Praise. At his birth the Angels sing *Glory in the highest.* *Luk* 2. 14. The Shepherds praise God. *ver.* 20. At his conception *Mary* her Magnificat.

3. Humility. *Dens humilis & superbis homo?* is God *Phil.* 2. 3, 4, 5.
humble and man proud? ^{ad 12.}

4. The Justice and Necessity of our new birth: Justice
G 3 by

Phil. 2. 2. 3, 4; again, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God, John 3. 5.
 5. 4d 12.
 a Tit. 2. 11, 12.
 John 36, 7, 8.
 b H. b. 8. 10.

by way of retaliation: Necessity, for except a man be born
 5. The Principles of this our new birth are, the a Spirit
 of God, and the b heart of man. For as Christs birth proceeded from Two principles, the one *Active*, which was the Holy Ghost: the other *Passive*, viz. the Virgins womb; so our new birth must have both these principles also. The *Active*, which is the secret operation of Gods Spirit, and the *Passive*, in which the work is wrought, which is the heart of man. And that which can prepare and fit the heart for Christ to be born in it, or the Holy Ghost to overshadow it, is the Virgin temper, of humility, innocency, submission. It behoves us then humbly to submit to the work of the Spirit, and to prepare Virgin hearts for Christ to be born in, and the Holy Ghost to. over shadow.

The Third Article of the Creed.

He suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead and buried, He descended to Hell.

THis is the brief description of the Second degree of our Saviours Humiliation, and it comprehends his whole Passion, his Agony, Bloody Sweat, his Cross and Passion, Death and Burial. That there is no mention here made of his whole life; but so quick a transition from his Birth, to his Death: the reason is conceived to be, because his life was so humble, and full of misery, that it may well be thought to be a continual suffering. Under this word then, *He suffered*; we may well comprehend all his infirmities, his hunger, his thirst, his weariness, his reproaches, his griefs, his sorrows, his temptation, the gain-saying of sinners, which he sustained.

This Article is especially to be understood, because upon his Death the whole hinge of our Salvation turns. *I desire to know nothing but Jesus Christ crucified.* 1 Cor. 2. 2. And it needs no long exposition, for that the Whole History of it is so clearly and fully set forth by the Evangelists: yet

yet these particulars would be remembred,

1. Who it is that suffered. Jesus Christ the Son of God.

2. That he suffered freely, and voluntarily, *Isai. 53. 10. Job. 10. 17, 18.*

3. What he suffered. The wrath, though not the whole *Lam. 1. 12.* wrath of God.

4. That these his sufferings were not only in his body, but also extended to his soul, *Mat. 26. 38.*

5. That he suffered the death of the Cross, which was a painful, shameful, bloody, accursed death. *Mat. 27. Luk 23.*

6. Under whom he suffered, viz. *Pontius Pilate*, the *Mat. 27. 2.* Deputy at that time of *Judea*, under *Tiberius*. Although he were God, yet he submitted to a legal power.

7. That he submitted to the separation of his Soul *Mat. 27. 50.* from his Body, or the power of Death. He was crucified, dead.

8. Nay, he yet went one degree lower, for he was laid up in the heart of the earth. Buried he was, though *he made his grave with the rich, Isai. 53. 9. Mat. 27. 57.*

9. The motive of his suffering. No worth in us, nor *a Rom. 5. 6, 8.* no merit on our part, but the bowels of his infinite charity and mercy. *9. 10.*

10. The end that he suffered. Not for any commodity to himself, but meerly for our good and benefit; which is in the Scriptures expressed in divers words, that import the same things: as,

1. That we might obtain remission of sins, *Rev. 1. 5. Heb. 9. 11, 12.* he hath loved us, and washed us from our sins in his blood, *to the end.* *Col. 2. 13, 14. He blotted out the hand-writing, &c. without shedding of blood there is no remission.*

2. That we might be delivered from the Tyranny of the Devil, *2 Tim. 2. 26.* Now is the Judgement of this world, now is the Prince of this world cast out. *John 12. 31.*

3. That we might be freed from punishment. *The chastisement of our peace was upon him, Isai. 53. 5. He bare our sins in his body, that is, the punishment of our sin.*

4. To reconcile us to God. *We are reconciled by the death of his Son, Rom. 5. 10.*

5. That

5. That he might redeem us. 1. From our vain conversation, *1 Pet. 1. 18.* 2. From the curse of the Law, *Gal. 3. 13.*

6. That by his blood we might have an entrance to Heaven, *Heb. 10. 19, 20.*

The uses we are to make of his Passion.

Rom. 13. 1. 1. That we as he submit, and shew a passive obedience to authority. Though he could have commanded whole Legions of Angels, yet he would suffer under *Pontius Pilate.*

Rom. 8. 17. 2. That we seriously consider, that he was *Vir dolorum*, *Isai. 53. 3.* a man of sorrows, and suffer with him at least in compassion. *Luk. 23. 27.* *Lam. 1. 13.* *1 Cor. 12. 26.*

Col. 2. 11. 3. That we lay to heart the greatness of our sins, that caused these sorrows, and abhor them, *Acts 2. 41.*

Rom. 6. 6. 4. That we do not wallow in sin, and so, as much as lies in us, crucify him again, *Heb. 6. 6.*

5. But rather that we crucify the flesh with the affections and lusts, *Rom. 6. 6.* Destroy the body of sin, *Col. 2. 11.*

Rom. 8. 13. 6. That we make his death an example of innocency, patience, humility, charity, and be content to suffer for God, *Heb. 12. 1, 2.* being assured that if we suffer with him, we shall also reign with him, *Rom. 8, 18.*

1 John 4. 19. 7. That we remember the greatness of Gods love in giving his Son. His Sons love, in giving himself to dye, and so to dye for us; to love, admire, and thank him for it, *Rev. 1. 5, 6.*

Rom. 8. 33, 34. 8. That yet upon the accusation of Satan, or our own conscience, we be comforted. Because by this one Sacrifice of Christ upon the Cross, we are saved and redeemed. *Rom. 6. 2.*

Rom. 5. 1, 2, 3. 9. That we be not disheartned by Death, or the Grave, seeing that sin, the sting of death, is taken away, *1 Cor. 15.* and Death made an entrance to Life.

He descended to Hell.

There be Two opinions about the exposition of this part of the Article, and both may be piously retained.

1. Some

1. Some judge that Christ did locally descend into Hell as it signifies the place of the damned. But not to suffer there: for without question, to his sufferings there was a *Consummation* upon the Cross: but to triumph over Satan in his own territories, and openly to shew him the victory he had gotten over him by death. This is the passive or common opinion of the Antients, and is yet, of many sound modern Divines. They to this purpose urge these places of Scripture, *Psal. 16. 10. Thou shalt not leave my soul in Hell*, cited, *Acts 2. He descended into the lower parts of the Earth*, *Ephes. 4. 9. Who shall descend into the deep*, that is, to bring Christ again from the dead, *Rom. 10. 7. Christ was quickened in the Spirit*, by which he went, and preached to the Spirits that were in prison, *1 Pet. 3. 19. And having spoiled principalities, and powers, he made a shew of them openly*, *Col. 2. 15.*

*Vide B. Bilson's
descend of
Christ into
Hell page 591.
& page 602.*

2. Others are of opinion, that by his descent to Hell, is meant no more, but that he continued, was not only dead, but continued in that state, his soul being really separated from his body for some space: but not so long, that his body did putrify in the Grave; so that by them this word Dead is referred to the separation of his soul from his body: but his descent to Hell, to his continuance under the power of death.

I will not be the arbitrator, let every man be perswaded, as the Arguments produced by either side will perswade him. However this is safe; That Christ did descend virtually, *i. e.* The power and vertue of his death was such, that he conquered for us the power of Hell.

*Rev. 1. 18.
Acts 2. 36.*

Art. 4. *He rose again the third day.*

Math. 28.

They who conceive Christ descended locally to Hell, make those words a part of this Article, and will have it, together with this, the first step of our Saviours exaltation: when death being conquered by his mighty power, he truly rose from the Grave, the third day in that very flesh, in which he died, but now dying no more, lives for ever.

Rom. 6. 9, 10.

Mat. 28.
Mark 16.
Luk 24.
John 20.
Acts 2.
Heb. 2. 4.

That Christ arose, needs not be proved to Christians. The testimony of Angels, of the watch, of the Apostles, his often and often apparitions, the effusion of the Holy Ghost upon the Apostles, the miracles done by them in his name (by which God confirmed from Heaven what they preached) are sufficient witnesses.

We are here then only to consider.

1. Who it was that rose, viz. The same Christ that went to the Grave, and the same body that was crucified, and laid in the Grave. Of this, his apparition to *Thomas* is a sufficient testimony, when he shewed his hands, and his feet, *Ioh 20 20. 27.*

2. Who it was that raised him. It was the work of the whole Trinity. It is attributed to the Father. *Acts 2. 24 33.* To himself being God the Son. *Ioh 10 17, 18.* To the Spirit. *Rom. 8. 11.* In this then lies the difference betwixt the Resurrection of Christ, and others, that he rose: They were raised. He rose *sua virtute*, They *precaria*. His Deity raised his Humanity: but others were raised by others, they raised not themselves. And the second difference is, that he rose as the Prince of life, as the *first born among many Brethren*. As the *first fruits of those that sleep*, for he saw no corruption, neither hath death any more dominion over him. But *Lazarus* and others saw corruption, and were to see it again; since, though they were restored to life, and called from their Graves; yet, they were mortal creatures, and must die the second time.

3. When he did arise. *The third day*, nor sooner, nor later.

1. Sooner he would not arise, that he might take all occasion away from his adversaries of cavilling, that he was not truly dead: it was, that his death should not be questioned.

2. Longer he would not defer it, partly that he might not see corruption, for as Physicians teach, after 72 hours the body putrifies: partly that he might bring comfort to his Disciples, who by his death began to despair, whether or no he were the *Messiah* that was to redeem *Israel*. *Luk 24. 21.* To confirm their faith then, he arose so soon.

Besides,

John 2 19.
John 10. 18.

Acts 3. 15.
Rev. 1. 5.
Col. 1. 18.
1 Cor. 15. 20.
Rom. 6. 9.

Besides, by this stay in the grave, and rising from the Mat. 12. 39. grave, the Type, in *Jonah* was fulfilled *As Jonah was three days and three nights in the Whales belly, so shall the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.* Which yet must be understood by a *Synecdoche*, a part for the whole, for he lay not there above Thirty six, or Thirty eight hours at the most.

4. Necessary it was for Christ to rise.

1. That he might receive honour for his depression and humility, *Phil. 2. 8.* 9. That being debased as a servant, and crucified as a sinner, he might be declared to be the Son of God. *Rom. 1. 4.*
2. For our Justification, *Rom. 4. 25.* that we might be assured that the great debt of our sin is discharged, *1 Pet. 1. 19 Acts 20. 28.* The comforter, that he promised, was to convince the world, *i. e.* satisfy the consciences of men, concerning that everlasting Righteousness, purchased by him, and to be brought in by him, *Dan. 8. 14.* And the conviction was, that he arose; For had not the debt been fully paid, and the purchase made, he must needs have been detained under the bonds of death.
3. This gives us assurance that our bodies shall arise also. For he was but the *First fruits.* *1 Cor. 15. 1 Pet. 1. 3.* and the same body. *This corruptible must put on incorruption, this mortal, immortality.*
This signally, individually.

The use of this Article, for our present practice, is,

1. That as he rose from the Grave, so we actually rise Ephes. 2. 1. from sin to a new life, Rom. 6. 4. Ephes. 5. 14. Col. 3. 1. 2 Cor. Col. 1. 13. 5. 15. for sin is a sleep, nay worse, a death. *Dead in sin.*
2. That this be not deferred and put off, no more than Rom. 13. 11. 2 Cor. 6. 2. Heb. 4. 7. Christ did defer his Resurrection: after some few hours he arose from the Grave; and a few hours will be enough, nay too much, to sleep in sin.
3. This work is to be done perfectly, all our old sins 1 Thes. 5. 23.

are to be shaken off, as Christ left the Napkin, the cloaths, all the furniture of a dead Corps in the Grave.

4. And when we begin the work, we must continue in it, and go through with it. *Christ being raised from the dead, dies no more*, Rom. 6. 9. *Likewise reckon ye also*. verse 11.

The Fifth Article of the Creed concerning Christ.

Mark 16. 19.
Acts 19. 10.
Ephes. 1. 20.

He ascended into Heaven, and sitteth on the right hand of God the Father Almighty.

IN this Article is set down the next degree of our Saviours Exaltation, to Heaven he ascended, that being there in Glory, he might execute all his Offices: and it was prefigured by the entrance of the High Priest into the holiest of all, *Heb.* 9. 7. having two degrees.

1. His Ascension foretold, *Psal.* 68. 18. performed, *Acts* 1. *Mark.* 16. *Luke* 24.

2. His Session foretold, *Psal.* 110. 1. revealed to *Stephen.* *Acts* 7. 56. proved, *Ephes.* 1. 20. *Heb.* 1. 13.

Acts 1. 3.

After our Saviour had conversed Forty days from the time he rose, with his Disciples: partly to confirm the truth of his Resurrection, and partly to instruct them in their future administration :

John 3. 13.
John 14. 2.
17. 24.
Acts 1. 9.

1. He ascended by the same power he arose : not by any other power, but his own, that of his Deity.

2. Visibly. The Disciples beholding it, that they might be *αὐσθηταί*.

3. On a Cloud : in a cloud he is to come, *Mat.* 24. 30. and therefore he went on a cloud. *Act.* 1. 11. which cloud yet was not *Necessarium vehiculum.*, a necessary Chariot, support or stay to him ; such he needed not, but rather *adminiculum solenne*, a solemn and triumphal Throne, which it pleased him to assume for his greater Majesty and Glory.

4. And this cloud left him not, till it mounted him to Heaven, Into Heaven, saith the Creed, consonant to that in *Acts* 1. 11. and *Luk* 24. 51: *ἐς τὸν οὐρανόν*, which yet *Ephes.*

Ephes. 4. 10. seems to be higher, the Altitude to which he was exalted, was *ὑπὲρ πάντας τοὺς οὐρανούς*, *ὑπὲρ* above, and *πάν* aloft, above all the Heavens, even the highest of them.

That these Texts may be harmonious, know you must, that Heaven is subject to a double acception. For,

1. It is taken for those common received Orbs, be they Ten or Eleven, it matters not; and to Heaven Christ may well be said to ascend, because his progress from below, was towards these Orbs above. *quasi ad terminum.*

2. Or Secondly, Heaven is taken for the *Empyreum* *Rev. 21.* Heaven, called in Scripture *The City of God*; The seat of his holiness, *Jerusalem which is above: The Heaven of Heavens*, being above the rest. And into this, Christ being ascended, may well be said to be *ὑπὲρ πάντων τῶν οὐρανῶν*, because he hath under him all the other visible Orbs, as his Footstool.

4. The reasons of our Saviours Ascension may be these,

1. For his own honour. The Jews while he was on Earth, endeavoured to bring down his Name, Person, Power, but God hath righted him in all these; Lifted up his Person, *Psal. 110. Psal. 7.* Enlarged his power, *Mat. 28. 18. Rev. 5. 12.* Exalted his Name, *Phil. 2. 9. Claritas humilitatis premium.*

2. That he might save, redeem, and work out our salvation to the uttermost, *Heb. 7. 25.* Do in Heaven for us what was to be done.

1. Be our Advocate and Intercessor, *1 Joh. 2. 2.*

2. Send down the Holy Ghost. *Joh. 16. 7. Ephes. 4. 12.*

3. Be our Protector and Lord in Heaven. *Ephes. 4. 8.*

3. That he might shew his Kingdom to be eternal, heavenly, spiritual, *not of this world*, as the Jews expected, in which error the Apostles were also involved. *Acts 1. 6.* *Dan. 2. 44. Ioh. 18. 36.*

4. That he might exalt our Nature. For when Jesus was taken to Heaven, our nature united to his person was thither taken together with him, and made superior to the Angels, for, *so which of the Angels, said he, at any time. Heb. 1. 5.*

5. That

5. That he might prepare a place even for our bodies, *John* 14. 2, 3. *John* 17. 24. At his parting he sent down his pawn, viz. his Spirit by which he did descend to us, he took our pawn, our flesh with him, to assure us we should ascend to him. At his rising, he took to himself the keys of hell and death, and let himself out, and all his: and so now at his ascending, he took to himself the keys of heaven, and opened the Kingdom to all believers, *Heb.* 10. 20. In his ascension *Dedicata sunt nostra ascensionis primordia*, The beginnings of our ascension were dedicated.

The influence upon our life, is,

1. That we ascend after him: have our conversation in Heaven: be Heavenly-minded: seek after, and favour the things that are above, *Col.* 3. 1. *Ephes.* 2. 19. *Phil.* 3. 20. *Mat.* 6. 21.

2. That we defile not our bodies, and pollute our souls: for into that City no unclean thing shall enter, *Rev.* 21. 27. The Angels at his ascension appeared in white apparel, with our Lord ascended no pride, no malice, no wickedness, &c.

2. *Sits on the right hand of God the Father Almighty.*

This is the Third Degree of our Saviours Exaltation. God is a Spirit, and hath neither right nor left hand. This then is spoken after the manner of men, who place him, whom they will most honour upon their right hand, as appears by the honour *Solomon* did to his Mother *1 Reg.* 2. 19. The sheep were set at the right hand, *Mat.* 25. and *Zebedees* wife was desirous that one of her Sons should be placed on the right hand. So God is said to place his Son on his right hand, purposing to him the greatest honour, *Ephes.* 1. 20.

An honour so great and peculiar to Christ, that it never was done to any creature, no not an Angel, *Heb.* 1. 13. By it he is exalted to be,

1. King of Saints, *Rev.* 15. 3.

2. Judge of sinners, *Act.* 17. 31.

3. Prince

3. Prince of our salvation. *Act. 5. 11.*

4. The High Priest of our profession, *Heb. 8. 1.*

Now there was an union of his Regal power, and his Priestly Office, giving commands to his Church, and interceding with God for his Church, having power actually to bestow that grace and pardon, for which he intercedes. Of which, that we may be the more fully persuaded, the person before whom he intercedes, is,

*Heb. 9. 24.
Mat. 28. 18.
19, 20.*

1. *A Father.* and therefore willing.

2. *Almighty,* and therefore able to grant what he asks.

The influence upon our lives is this.

1. That we hence learn the Art of ascending, which is to descend first. For *God gives grace to the humble, and resists the proud.* James 4. 6 Prov. 3. 34.

2. That we give up our selves to be ruled by his commands and institutions, and to all that rule under him.

John 5. 23.

3. To offer our petitions by him, and depend upon his intercession.

*Heb. 4. 14,
15, 16.*

4. To receive and make advantage of the Grace, which flows from him.

Heb. 6. 11.

5. To look to him in all our temptations, and pressures, and expect help from his right hand.

Isai. 26. 4, &c.

6. To honour the Son, as we do the Father, to cast our Crowns at his feet, stoop at his Scepter, live by his Laws, and follow him so here, that we may sit in his Throne, *Joh. 5. 23. Rev. 4. 10. Psal. 2. 10. Rev. 3. 21. hereafter.*

The Sixth Article of the Creed concerning Christ.

Jude 7. 14, 15.

Acts 17. 32.

1 Thel. 4. 16.

From thence he shall come again to judge both the Quick and dead.

This is the last degree of our Saviours exaltation, and it is future, raised he is to the throne to be the Judge at the last day. There be Three benefits that Christ confers upon his Church, one of Redemption, another of Patronage, a third of Judicature: By his death and passion

John 5. 22, 27.

sion we are redeemed : By his ascension he becomes our Advocate, and Patron : And in this he is appointed to be our Judge:

The day when he shall do this, is called the day of the Lord, *1 Thes. 5. 2.* and such a day there shall be, *2 Cor. 5. 10* and it is called his day, because his Glory and Majesty shall be most resplendent in it.

There is a particular and a general day of Judgement.

Luke 16. from
verse 19 to
the end.

1. A particular, that passeth upon every man immediately upon his death, when the Soul departed is set at Gods Tribunal, and called to question for all thoughts, words, actions, *Rev. 14. 13.*

2. A general, of all men after the re-assumption of their bodies, which is here intended, and described, *Mat. 25. 1 Thes. 4. Rev. 20. 12.*

2^d Cor. 5. 10.
Rom. 14. 10.

Of these, some are departed before that day, call'd here Dead, and these must rise again with their bodies to Judgement: All must appear. 2 Others shall be living at that day, called here the Quick, and these shall not dye, but be changed onely; *1 Cor. 15. 51. 1 Thes. 4. 17.* Of both kinds Christ must be Judge.

St. Paul acquaints the *Athenians*, *Acts 17. 31.* that God hath appointed a day in which he will judge the world in Righteousness: and this was one of the points he reasoned on before *Felix*, *Acts 24. 25.* And yet scoffers there are, that ask, *where is the promise of his coming*, *2 Pet. 3. 3.* and their lives answer such conceits, *Eccles. 11. 9. Wisd. 5. 6, 7.* Now if the light of reason, nor the light of conscience, nor the light of Scripture, nor the faith of Devils (for they tremble at it) cannot confute and convince such Atheists, the last day appointed by God for the judgement shall do it, when the Lord shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the Arch-Angel, and with the Trump of God, *1 Thes. 4. 16.*

The reasons why Christ shall come again to Judgement.

1. Because this makes very much for his honour. The Jews and prophane men as yet objected his Cross, his Passion,

passion and ignominious death, humble birth and life. Christ crucified is a stumbling-block to the Jews and Gentiles. Now that day will repair his honour, and shame his enemies. *They shall see him whom they have pierced, and* Zech. 12. 10.
mourn.

2. That God's Justice and Wisdom in ordering the world might be apparent. In this life, though many wicked men have been made examples of Gods wrath, as *Pharaoh, Julian, Arrius, &c.* yet the most have descended into their graves in peace, spent their lives, and ended their days in Riches, Mirth, Pleasure. On the other side, good men have been under the Cross, destitute, afflicted, tormented, martyred, *Heb. 11. 36, 37, 38.* That then it might appear to the whole world that he was wise in his dispensations, and just in his retributions, this day shall make it manifest, when *Lazarus*, and all his servants for Luke 16. 25. their light and momentary Afflictions shall have an exceeding weight of glory; and *Dives*, and all ungodly men, for 2 Cor. 4. 16. their Riot, Pleasure, Pomp, Oppressions, Cruelties, shall be accursed and tormented. This we now preach and believe, but both those that believe it, and believe it not, shall finde it true by experience.

3. Many things now are hid and secret. *The heart of man is deceitful above all things, who can know it? Absalom* Jer. 17. 9. pretends a vow, when he raised Rebellion against his Father: *Judas* kisseth Christ, when it is his intent to betray him: 2 Sam. 15. 7. The Pharisee leuens his face, fasts, and prays, when Mat. 26. 40. his purpose is to devour a Widdows house. All these things are yet in *occulto* secret, and many more, so that an Hypocrite may pass with us for a good Saint. But that day will reveal all; Every mans work shall then be made manifest, 1 Cor. 3. 14. Every mans heart shall then be opened. Our Saviours words will be made good, *Luke 8. 17.* *There is nothing secret, which shall not be made manifest, neither any thing hid, that shall not be known, and come abroad.*

4. The body together with the Soul partakes in the service and dis-service of God, and ought therefore in justice to partake of bliss and pain, which is hid and unknown, should it alwayes lye in the earth. Our Saviour will therefore come again, and at his coming raise these bodies, which being united to the Souls, shall receive their doom, and in the open view of God, Men, and Angels, they that have done good, shall go into everlasting Bliss, and, those that have done ill into everlasting pain.

2 Cor. 5. 10.

Matt. 25. 46.

Dan. 12. 2.,

The Influence that this should have on our life is this.

1. To keep a perpetual watch over all our waies, to looke that our lives be holy, just, sober, because we must give an Account when Christ shall come to judge. 2 Pet. 3. 11, 14. Luke 12. 45.

2. To take heed that our Accompts be even against his coming, because though we expect a gracious, yet we look also for a righteous Judge, one that is no acceptor of persons. It is the Lord Jesus. 2 Thes. 1. 2. The Lord that gave the Law in terror in Mount Sinai, will require a terrible accompt of it: and he will be Jesus, a Saviour to none, but those who make a Conscience, and do their endeavour to keep it: the Apostle thus presents him to us: The Lord Jesus, taking vengeance in flaming fire, Meek as a Lamb, and yet the Lamb hath his wrath. Rev. 6. 16 A Judge upon whom the Spirit sets this Character. Rev. 2. 23. that will search the hearts and reins. These notions may carry us on not to disguise our actions with the colour of Religion, or vain-confidence of favour. For he will try, sift, search all things, and without flattery or favour proceed according to every mans works.

3. Yet, if our heart can assure us, that we serve him constantly, uprightly, sincerely, though with weak endeavours, and many failings, here is comfort for us that he shall be the Judge of our sins, that gave himself, and dyed for our sins. He then that came to save, is not like to condemn; not them who believe in him, and shew their Faith and labour of love by a good life. Who shall accuse, who

is it that condemns? *Rom. 8. 33. 34.*

There is in that Reverend Bishops Book of the Sabbath. Dr. Francis White, sometimes L. Bishop of Ely, an excellent brief of mans Redemption by Christ which, because it may give much light to this mystery and to those Articles of the Creed which set it forth; I thought good to exscribe it, and propose it in this place. It is extant, p. 197. Saith he;

1. It is acknowledged that the work of humane Redemption was a most gracious and glorious work; and that in 3 respects.

1. a The fountain and original cause thereof, was the riches of the mercy of God, and the abundance of his love to mankind. *a Iohn 3. 16. Gal 4. 4.*

2. It was effected by extraordinary means, to wit, not merely by the Word and imperative Power of God, but by the Mission, Incarnation, Humiliation, and Passion of the only and dearly beloved Son of God. *Phil 2. 6, 7, 8. Luke 2. 14.*

3. Because the fruit, benefit, and effect thereof, was Glory and Honour to God Almighty: and Glory and Honour, and eternal Happiness to every one which believeth and worketh good, both to the Jew, and Gentile. *Iohn 19. 3. Heb. 10. 14.*

2. The Doctrine of our Church is: That the Dearly Beloved Son of God, Jesus Christ, made perfect our Redemption by his death: to wit, the whole work of mans Redemption, which was to be performed by the payment of a price, and satisfaction for sin. For this great work of humane Redemption was not effected by the Resurrection of Christ, but by his obedience and sacrifice upon the Cross: and it was fully wrought and finished upon the Passion-Friday, when, after our Saviour said Consummatum est, It is finished, He gave up the Ghost. *1 Tim. 2. 6. 1 Cor. 6. 20. Iohn 1. 12. & 24.*

3. But, besides the price and ransom paid by Christ our Saviour for the Redemption of all men: it was necessary for mans actual deliverance out of captivity, that the fruit, effect, and benefit of Christs Redemption be applyed and conferred. For without this latter Redemption, the payment of a price only, could have profited nothing. *1 Iohn 1. 7.*

Now this work of Application, an actual collation of the fruit of Christs passion and sacrifice upon the Cross, upon man, began to be in fieri, in doing on the day of his Resurrection, but it was not then finished and perfected. For to the Consummation thereof

thereof all these actions following were necessary.

1. *Our Saviours Ascension into Heaven*, Ephes. 1. 8. &c.
2. *His Intercession for us at the right hand of God the Father*, Rom. 8. 34. Heb. 7. 25. 1 John 2. 1.
3. *The Mission of the Holy Ghost upon the Apostles and Primitive Church*, Acts 2. 4, &c.
4. *Apostolical Preaching of the Gospel both to the Jews and Gentiles*, Luke 24. 47.
5. *The Donation of Heavenly Grace prevenient, subsequent, excitant, adjutant, or co-operant*. 1 Cor. 15. 10. Phil. 2. 3.

Our Saviour then rested not from the whole work of mans Redemption upon his Resurrection day. For his actions of collation and application of the benefit, and ultimate effect of that Gracious work, had beginning on that day: But they were multiplyed and continued afterwards, and some of them must continue to the worlds end.

Thus that Reverend Bishop.

Article 8. Of the Holy Ghost.

I believe in the Holy Ghost.

Gal. 4. 6.
1 Cor. 12. 3.

HAVING confess'd our Faith in God the Father, and God the Son: The confession of our Faith in the Holy Ghost very aptly follows, because no man can call God *Abba, Father, but by the Holy Ghost*: nor no man say *Iesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost*.

The meaning of this Article, in brief, is this, I am fully perswaded that all those ~~whole~~ things, which in the Scripture are spoken either of the person, gifts or graces of the Holy Ghost are certainly true, necessary to Salvation, and therefore I commit my self to his tuition and Direction.

Acts 2. 4.
5. 3. 4.
19. 2. 5.

1, I believe that he is God, the third person in the Trinity; not a vertue, not a gift, but a person: which is thus proved.

1 Pet. 4. 14.

1, From our Baptism; for we are to be baptized in his

his Name, *Mat. 28. 19.* And we cannot be baptised into any Name, but Gods alone, *1 Cor. 1. 13.*

2, From the form of Benediction, *2 Cor. 13. 13.* and we cannot bleſs by any name but Gods, *Numb. 6. 27.*

3, By the Actions in Scripture attributed unto him, Illumination, Regeneration, Conſolation, &c. Now *actiones ſunt ſuppoſitorum*, Actions are proper to perſons, not virtues.

4, By his Attributes that are common to him with the other two perſons: Eternity *Heb. 9. 14.* Omnipreſence, *1 Cor. 2. 10.* Omnipotency, *Iob 33. 4. Pſalm 33. 6.* and

139 7

2, He is Holy:

1, In himſelf, that is, pure, without all mixture and compoſition, either of pollution or corruption.

2, Because he is the Author of all holineſs and purity in us. All our holineſs being but a ray or effuſion of that ſanctifying Spirit, who works in us by his grace.

3, All excellent gifts whatſoever are from him, even thoſe common gifts of Nature, Art, or Reaſon, Strength, Courage, *Judges 14. 6.* All Arts and Sciences, *Exodus 31. 3.* Policy to govern, *1 Sam. 11. 6.*

But here we ſpeak of him, as he is the Lord and giver of life, or that ſpiritual life which is required of Chriſtians, of which, we are to believe he is the Author.

And to this life he is helpful two wayes, both outwardly, and inwardly

1, Outwardly by his Word, firſt inſpired into the Prophets, after into the Apoſtles, upon whom he viſibly deſcended, ſitting them with grace, and enſtating them with power, to plant, preſerve and govern the Church while they lived; and to appoint and ordain a Miniſtery, that ſhould ſucceed them to the end of the world. From the Commiſſion given to them, theſe now have power,

1, To preach and baptize, *Mat. 28. 19.*

2, To confirm the baptized, *Acts 14. 22. Heb. 6. 2.*

1 3

3, To

Titus 3.
Ephel. 3. 5.
2 Thel. 2. 13.
John 3. 5.
16. 7.

1 Pet. 1. 15, 16.
Luke 1. 35.

1 Pet. 3. 23.
Titus 3. 5.

2 Pet. 1. 21.
Luke 12. 1, 2.
Acts 2. 3, 4, 5, 7
Rom 15. 19.
Acts 20. 18.
John 20. 21.
Mat. 28. 20.

Titus 1. 5.

2 Tim. 1. 6.

1 Cor. 12.

2 ver. 4. & 14.

3. To administer the Eucharist, or Supper of the Lord,
*Luke 22. 19.*4. To exercise the Power of the keys of the Church
either in Jurisdiction, or Ordination, *Mat. 16. 19. John*
*20. 23.*And these are called *Chrismata, Gratia gratis data*, gifts
that sanctify not the man; but empower and enable him
onely to execute a ministerial Office.2. But to those which shall be saved he affords not only
an outward, but an inward grace, by which he works effe-
ctually in the heart all saving graces, *Gal. 5. 22.*

Titus 3. 5.

Ioh. 2. 27.

1. By him we are at first regenerate in Baptism,

2. By him after confirmed, *Heb. 6. 2. Rom. 8. 15, 16, 17.*3. By him after renewed to repentance, *1 Tim. 5. 22.*

4. By him put in minde of what we know not.

5. By him put in mind of what we forget, *John 14.*
*26.*6. By him stirred up in what we are dull, *2 Cor. 3. 6.*7. By him helped in our prayer, *Rom. 8. 26.*8. By him relieved in our Infirmities, *John 14. 16.*9. By him comforted in our heaviness, *John 16. 7.*10. By him sealed to the day of Redemption, *Eph. 4. 30.*11. By him raised again at the last day, *Rom. 8. 11.*These are called *Gratia gratum facientes*, or *graces*,
such, by which the Holy Ghost shapes the heart within,
justifies, sanctifies a sinner, clears the Conscience toward
God, and settles a welcome peace. In a word, such as makes
a Gracious man.

Ioh. 16. 7.

James 5. 14.

Luke 4. 18.

Ephes. 4. 1.

From these operations he is
called *ὑποστάτης*
1 An Advocate,
2 A Comforter,
3 An Exhorter.1. An Advocate, settling a Ministry to pray and intercede
for the people.2. A Comforter, in divulging the comfortable news of
the Gospel, containing the promises of grace and pardon to
the comfortless.

3. An Exhorter, to walk worthy of our calling.

The Duties that this Article binds us unto, are,

- 1, That we acknowledge him by Faith to be the third person in the Trinity, proceeding from the Father and the Son.
- 2, *a* That we expect all life, light, grace and holiness from him. *a* James 1. 17, 18. *b* Acts 2. 38.
- 3, *b* By Repentance and Contrition, to have a heart prepared to receive the Holy Ghost.
- 4, To pray to God to bestow upon us his gifts and graces. *Pf.* 51. 10, 11. That may prevent, excite, and assist us in our Christian profession.
5. That we submit to Gods Ordinances, and expect Grace that way he is pleased to bestow it: which is then done,
 - 1, *c* When we are diligent in his Word. *c* Acts 10. 44. 16. 14.
 - 2, *d* When we are obedient to the Pastors set over us by the Holy Ghost: *In voce homines, Tuba Dei.* *d* Heb. 13. 17. The Gospel is Gods Trumpet at mans mouth.
 - 3, *e* When we receive the Sacraments, being the ordinary Conduits to convey Grace unto us. *e* 1 Cor. 11. 28. *f* Acts 2. 38.
 - 4, *f* When we submit to the Censures, or Discipline of the Church. *f* 1 Cor. 5. 4. 13. 2.
- 6, *g* That we call upon God, that his special grace and assistance may go along with his own Ordinances. *g* Eph. 6. 18, 19. 2 Thes. 3. 1.
- 7, *h* That we attend and wait for the approaches of the Spirit, whether the access be made by any outward or inward means. *h* Luke 11. 13. *b* Acts 1. 4. Col. 3. 16.
- 1, *i* If it be outward in the Word or Sacraments, that we lay up the seed in our heart, and bring forth fruit with patience. *i* Luke 8. 1.
- 2, *k* If the Motion be more inward and secret, that then we resist it not, *l* Quench it not, nor grieve the Holy Spirit, whereby we are sealed to the day of Redemption, *Eph* 4. 30. *k* Acts 7. 51. *l* 1 Thes. 5. 19.
- 8, That Ministers be careful to feed the flock, *over which the Holy Ghost hath made them Overseers,* Acts 20. 28. *m* Heb 5. 4. Eph. 4. 11. Rom. 10. 15. Jer. 23. 21. & 27. 15. *of* Isa. 6. 3.
9. *m* That no man intrude upon any Administration

of the Spirit, without a lawful vocation, and abilities, and gifts.

Art: 9. I believe the Holy Catholick Church. The Communion of Saints.

All the Articles before concern God. These that follow are about those men, that with true Faith and obedience worship God: Set forth here under the Name of the Church, to whom alone the benefits following do belong, being the people whom Christ hath effectually Redeemed, and the Holy Ghost hath Sanctified.

Ephes 5. 25.
26, 27.

1. The Church.

Rom. 9. 25, 26.

The Subject is here the Church, in the Greek ἐκκλησία, from ἐκ out or from, and καλέω, to call: So that the word here signifies not a building, or house to which Christians repair to perform in common, Divine and Religious duties, but it signifies the people themselves, whom κλειο (the word whence Kirk or Church is derived) the Lord hath called out of the world, to be his peculiar people, over whom he challengeth, τοῦ κυρίου a Sovereign Authority: and who again out of the contemplation of his Sovereign power and dominion, are well content to do him homage, and obey his Laws and Ordinances.

This Church hath here 1 Holy,
2 Attributes, 2 Catholique.

1 Cor. 12. 13. &
4. 27.

1. Catholique.

Καθολικὴ signifies universal; and under it the amplitude and largeness of the Church is comprehended, it being extended to all places, and all persons. Formerly the Jews only were his people, but now the partition wall is broken down, and all Nations, and all persons in all Nations have a capacity to be of the Church of Christ, *Psal. 2. 8. Isay 2. 2. Acts 10. 35. Psalm 72. 8. Dan. 2. 34.*

1 Eph. 4. 4.

1, & This Church is but one, as it is in the Nicene Creed. One body knit together by one Spirit, under one Head. There is but one Lord, one Spirit, one Faith, one Baptism, Inwardly

Inwardly then and essentially it is but one, but outwardly and externally you may say there be many Churches, either National or Congregational; who are bound to retain one Faith: but may differ in Rites and Ceremonies.

2. Farther yet in respect of the different state and condition this one Church is } Triumphant,
distinguished into the } Militant.

1. The Triumphant Church is that blessed company of Martyrs and Saints, whose warfare is finished, and are entred into their *Masters joy*, Heb. 12 23.

2. The Church Militant is the society of those Christians, who being dispersed over the world, are always in Arms in War, and fight against Christs. and their own spiritual enemies, and are onely in expectation of their Crown and Triumph. *Rev.* 1. 9. & 12. 11. 2 *Tim.* 4. 7, 8.

Now this Church Militant consists of Two sorts of people, either of Professors, or true Beleevers. For which reason it is compared to a *Ner.* *Matth.* 13. to a *Field*, to a *Barn floor*, to *Ten Virgins*, whereof Five were *wise*, and Five *foolish.* *Mat.* 15.

1. Professors are such, who profess the Name of Christ, and are called Christians, who yet may be for manners, prophane: for worship unsound and hypocrites: for doctrine Heretiques: for communion Schismatics: All these belong to Christs visible Body.

2. True Beleevers, who are truly and inwardly such as they seem and are called: For manners, pure and holy: for worship, sound and sincere: for doctrine, Orthodox: in communion united. All these are univocal parts of Christs mystical Body.

Further, both these considered together, make a Visible Church. For outward Professors are the object of the eye. Seen it is, and seen ever it shall be, who they are that call themselves Christians. But who they are that in truth and sincerity profess Christ, that truly repent, and

Act. 10. 7. 14.
Act. 15. 3. 4.

Rev. 7. 14, 16.
& 6. 9.

Matth. 3.

Mat. 18. 17.

Mat. 13. 24.

Luk. 3. 14.

2 *Tim.* 2. 19.

Rom. 11. 4.

believe the Gospel : that are of the number of the Elect and shall be really saved, this we see not, And in this respect we call the Church invisible.

3. To believe the Catholick Church then, is to believe that there is a society of Christians dispersed into all quarters of the world, who are united under Christ their head, formalized and moved by his *a* Spirit : matriculated by Baptism : nourished by the *b* Word and *c* Supper of the Lord : ruled and continued under *d* Bishops and Pastors lawfully called to these Offices, who succeed those upon whom the wholly Ghost came down, and have the power of the *e* keys committed to them, for administration of Doctrine and Discipline. And who are bound to *f* preach the Word, to pray with, and *g* intercede for the people, to administer the Sacraments, to ordain *h* Ministers, and to use the Church Censures. *Mark* 16. 15, 16. *Mat.* 28. 19, 20. *1 Cor.* 4. 19, 20, 21. & *cap.* 5. 3, 4.

2. Holy.

That is the second Attribute. And so the Church is notwithstanding all the wrinkles, and spots found in it, Because,

Mat. 28. 16.
Ephes. 5. 26,
27.
Rev. 7. 14.
1 Pet. 2. 9.
Ephes. 2. 4.

1. Thes. 4. 3.
Psal. 19. 7. 8.
James 1. 27.
Rom. 7. 12.

1. The head of the Church Christ Jesus is Holy, that knew no sin, that did no sin, and therefore the Corps united to such a head may well be esteemed Holy : she hath *washed her robes in the blood of the Lamb.*
2. Of the real infusions of Holiness, and gifts of Grace that proceeds from the Holy Spirit, which animates the parts *Qua partes sunt, tribuntur recte toti secundum illam partem,* What belongs to a part only, may justly be attributed to the whole in respect to that part.
3. All her administrations and powers are ordained to produce Holiness. The Religion she professeth is an Holy Religion : the Law holy, just and good.
4. For that actual and inherent Holiness, that is in the lives of the true Professors. *You are washed*

you are sanctified, 1 Cor. 6. 11. They are born again, new Creatures, a reformed people.

Ephes. 2. 4.
2 Cor. 4. 5, 16.
2 Pet. 1. 4.

Though then the Church cannot be said to be *sanctified* wholly, spotless, without sin : or holy, because Original sin, though it be washed away in Baptism, as touching the guilt, yet in act and root remains : yet Holy she may well be said to be, having obtained the Grace of Justification and Regeneration.

1 John 1. 8.
Rom. 3. 23.
Rom. 7. 17.
20, 21.
Heb. 12. 1.

1. For the Holiness of Christ the Head, is imputed to a it, 1 Cor. 1. 30.

2 Heb. 7. 26,
27.
Heb. 10. 10.
to the end..

2. And she again follows, endeavors, and studies to be Holy (though in much imperfection) by the grace of the holy Spirit, which is given to her. Rev. 22. 11, 1 Joh. 3. 3.

The influence this Article hath upon our practises.

1. *b* That we break not into parties, factions, schisms, heresies.

b 1 Cor. 1. 10.
1 Cor. 11. 17.
Ephes. 4. 3.

2. That we preserve unity, charity, and brotherly love. Acts 2. 46.

3. *c* That we be obedient to the Church, and those that have the oversight of us, in every particular, and *National Church*.

c Heb. 13. 17.

4. That we follow after Holiness, labour and contend for increase of Grace, and all other duties of Christian purity, God is our Father, the Church our Mother, both are Holy, therefore we must be Holy Children. Levit. 20. 7. Gal. 4. 26. 1 Pet. 1. 13.

Heb. 12. 14.
Phil. 3. 13.
Heb. 13. 21.

2. *The Communion of Saints.*

Saints, is a word of that large extent, that it takes in them that are glorified in Heaven, and those who are in some degree sanctified on Earth. 1 Cor. 1. 2. Betwixt these there is a Communion, which is *Communio unio*, of which the Apostle Eph. 4. 4. gives us Seven heads, in which the Communion of Saints doth consist respectively.

A & s. 9.
Rom. 1. 7.

1. One body, meaning the mystical body of Christ, the Catholick Church, to which all Saints are united. In that body then they communicate.

1 Cor. 12. 12.
ad finem capitis.

2. One Spirit that animates them, of which all living members of the body participate. In that spirit they then communicate also. *1 Cor. 12. 12.*

3. One hope of our calling: for all are called to the communion of Christ, and to eternal life. *1 Cor. 1. 26, 27.* In the calling and end they communicate.

4. One Lord, not only by right of Creation, but Redemption. They then communicate in all the Relation, and must be this Lords servants.

5. One Faith, one and the same Religion, one and the same profession, and in this *common Faith once given to the Saints*, they communicate.

6. One Baptism, and in this they communicate also: for all were Baptized in the Name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

7. One God and Father: One God whom they serve, and one Father whose Children they are, and in him they have a common interest.

These are the most essential and internal Characters in which the communion of Saints doth consist, but yet another more external there is, by which they may be more evidently known to be of this communion, and this is their outward communication, for *κoinωνία*, which we translate Communion, doth often also signify Communication. *Heb. 13. 16. Rom. 15. 26. 2 Cor. 8. 4. 2 Cor. 9. 13. 1 Tim. 6. 18.* In which places to communicate, is to give, impart, to distribute, to make another partaker, of any gift, beneficence, liberality. Which for the object may have the soul or the body. So that the communion, or rather communication of Saints respects a liberality both Spiritual and Corporal.

2 Tim. 4. 2, 5.

2 Tim. 3.

16, 17.

1. Spiritually we communicate to others, when in Charity and Piety we communicate to mens souls, advice, counsel, reprehension, pray for them, or with them, administer to them the Sacraments, use the censures of the Church: in a word, any way apply unto them the means left in the Church to promote their salvation.

2. Corporally, we do them good, when we communicate

cate to the bodily indigencies of the poor Saints, as their necessities require. This done, *Act* 2. 45. Commanded, *Rom.* 15. 26. *1 Cor.* 16. 1, 2. *2 Cor.* 8. 12.
The meaning therefore of this part of the Creed, is, that the Saints have in common one God, one Christ, one Spirit, one Lord, one Faith, one Baptism, one Hope: And that they communicate in all duties of Charity and Piety.

The Duties from hence are.

1. *a* That we break none of these bonds of Unity, and make not a Monopoly, of that which is in common. *4 Ephes.* 4. 3. *Heb.* 10. 25.
2. *b* That we be charitable and liberal, and communicate to the necessities of the Saints. *b Heb.* 13. 16. *Gal.* 6. 10.
3. *c* That we advise, counsel, exhort, edify, reprove, do every spiritual office one to another, that may promote any mans salvation, as our place and vocation requires. *c 2 Tim.* 4. 2. *Heb.* 3. 13. *d Eph.* 6. 18. *Gal.* 5. 13. *Act.* 20. 36. *Act.* 4. 24. *1 Tim.* 2. 1, 2. *Numb.* 16. 46. *Mat.* 6. 14. *Isai.* 53. 12. *Luk.* 13. 34. *e Psal.* 111. 1. *Rom.* 1. 8. *Mortons ap- peal* 1, 2, 12. *sect.* 1. *1 Cor.* 12. *Rev.* 6. 10.
4. *d* That we pray with, and for one another. He that separates, and hath not charity enough to joyn in Prayer with other Christians, or is so proud and malicious, that he will not pray for other Christians, nay for all men, is not of Christs mind, that prayed for his persecuters.
5. *e* That we praise God with and for one another.
6. That we imitate the Saints in Heaven, that praise God, and *pray in general* for the Militant Church on Earth; for it cannot be conceived, that they being united to the Saints on earth in charity, (which must needs be heightened by their glorification, and the beatifical vision) will omit this especial testimony of charity.
7. That we pray for the consummation of all things, when the Saints in Heaven with the Saints on earth shall be made perfect. *Heb.* 11. 40. *1 Tim.* 1. 18.
8. That we delight in the Society of Saints, *Psal.* 16. 3. and renounce all fellowship with sin and sinners, *2 Cor.* 6. 17.
9. That we bear one anothers burthens, infirmities. *Gal.* 6. 2. *Rejoyce with those that Rejoyce, Weep with those that weep* *Rom.* 12. 15.

10. That

10. That no man lay a stumbling block or an occasion to fall, in his Brothers way. Rom. 14. 13. That is, that we beware of scandalizing our Brother.

Art. 10: Remission of sins.

This Article of Remission of sins doth very aptly follow the Catholick Church, and communion of Saints, in that none shall have their sins remitted, but those who are in the communion of the Church. Christ Jesus shall save his people from their sins. Mat. 1. 21. We read, *Isai. 33. 24.* of sins to be remitted : but to whom? To them that dwell in *Her*, that is, the Church. And *Zach. 13. 1.* A prophecy there is, that a fountain should be opened for sin and uncleanness; but it is restrained to the house of David, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem.

1. Jol. 3. 4.

Every sin is a transgression of the Law, *ἀνομία*. The Law was first broken by Adam, and by him sin entred into the world, and death by sin, *Rom. 5. 12.* And so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned, being in his Loins, which is original sin. This Law was, and is called the Law of Nature, which God first wrote in the heart, then in two Tables of stone. And of this there is made a second breach by all mankind, actually, in thought, word, and deed, sometimes weakly from infirmity, sometimes unwittingly from ignorance, sometimes wilfully, out of perverseness, and sometimes presumptuously, out of pride and malice. These are committed against God, against man, once, or often, dishonour or hurt more or less: So that from the cause from whence they rise, and frequency of the Act, and the object against whom committed, or the wrong or damage arising from them, (whether a duty be omitted, or an offence committed) they receive their denomination, and are called greater and lesser sins. But sins they are howsoever, being transgressions of the Law.

Numb. 15. 27.

30.

Plal. 19. 13.

14.

Mat. 5. 21, 22.

Jam. 4. 17.

Mat. 25. 42.

Jo. 19. 11.

Upon this breach of the Law there ariseth a Guilt, and upon the Guilt, an obligation to punishment, for *qui tenetur crimine, tenetur etiam poena*. For the first, the crime : all men are attached, for all have sinned, *Rom. 3. 23.* And

are

are in the state of Captives and Prisoners, and bound to answer for their misdoings at the great and fearful Tribunal. Luk 4. 18.

Non factum at this bar no man can plead, or should he: the accuser of the Brethren, and his own conscience would arise and plead against him, and if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knows all things, 1 Joh. 3. 20. Hitherto then *Tenetur*, he is held and convicted guilty.

2. But yet full satisfaction he may plead, the obedience of the Son of God both *Active* and *Passive*; *Active* in keeping and fulfilling every tittle of the law, and *Passive* in suffering the wrath of God due for the breach of the Law: Out of which obedience ariseth that actual Justice in Christ, that being imputed to us, in respect of that relation in which we stand unto Christ (he and all his elect being taken for one body) God doth release, acquit, and discharge the guilty prisoner. Rom. 4. 5.
1 Pet. 2. 22,
23, 24.
Heb. 53. 5 6.
1 Cor. 12. 12.
1 Joh. 1. 7.
2 Cor. 1. 21.

For upon this plea the Judge is pleased to remove out of his Court of Justice, and sit down in his seat of Mercy, and there pronounce a sentence of Absolution, instead of th: sentence of Condemnation, acknowledging the plea to be just, which the faithful and penitent sinner puts in: viz. That his onely Son *blotted out the hand-writing of Ordinances that was against us*; which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his Cross. *Col. 2. 14.*

1. He sate down, I say, in the Court of Mercy, when he pronounced this sentence of Absolution or Remission, because it proceeded *δωρεάν*, freely: freely from his grace. *Rom. 3. 24.* Now *δωρεάν* signifies such a gift or grace, *que causam juris antecedentem non habet*. Thus it is used, *Psal. 34. 19.* And in this sense applied to Christ, *Joh. 15. 25.* *μισήσαντες με δωρεάν*, They hated me without a cause.

And what cause did we give God to love us, or Christ to dye for us? what reason could there be on our part, of Gods *εὐδοκία*, good pleasure, or his sons *φιλανθρωπία*, love to mankind? We are all such as St Paul describes us, *Rom. 5.*
Witb-

Without strength, ungodly, sinners, enemies; and doth not God commend his love, that while we were such, Christ died for us? v. 8 It is then of *grace and mercy* Christ is given to us. *Eph. 2. 4, 5.*

Ezek. 18.

2. Besides it was another part of grace and mercy to accept of the satisfaction of another person for us, to punish him, and let us go. In common justice *the soul that sins must die*, but here the soul that sins is set at liberty, and the person that never sinned is put to death.

Consider then the case betwixt the person of the Father, and the Son, and no man dare call it a free remission, for the purchase was dear, and the price inestimable. But whatsoever it cost Christ, it cost us nothing, and so it is freely of Grace from Christ.

Mai. 53. 6.

Heb. 10. 14.

1 Joh. 2. 1, 2.

2. And to us it is freely Grace from God the Father to a sentence, I said, from his mercy-seat, not because he acquits us, and remits our sin without a full satisfaction to his justice, or accepts that for perfect righteousness, which is not perfect, but because when he might have exacted the uttermost Farthing of us, the principal debtors, he receives the full at the hands of a Surety, and that Surety his own dear Son, who had never offended or displeased him, *Mat. 3. 17.*

Rom. 6.

Ephes. 4. 22,

23, 24.

Titus 2. 12.

1 Cor. 4. 15.

1 Cor. 13. 12.

11.

Ephes. 4. 14.

2 Pet. 2. 2.

Heb. 8. 12.

But here it must not be forgotten. that upon the pronouncing this gracious sentence of Absolution and Remission, he covenants with all that he absolves, for new Obedience, that they *serve him in Righteousness and Holiness* *Luk 1. 71,* That they become *new Creatures, put off the old man, and put on the new: Deny ungodliness and worldly lusts, and live righteously, and soberly and godly in this present world.* This we call sanctification which must inhere in us and be perfect though not in degrees, yet in parts, which he hath promised to accept, and will remit the imperfection for Christs sake.

Remission then of sin imports Two things.

1. A freedom and discharge from the Law of Sin;
2. A freedom and discharge from the Law of death,

For, in sin there is, as appears *Rom. 8. 2.* a double Law or Power. 1, A Law *dominandi* of domineering. 2, Law *damnandi* of condemning. But to those who are in Christ, both these Laws are made void, made null, and quite abrogated.

1, The Law of sin, by which it commands and domineers, is cashiered, for no regenerate man obeys it in the Lust thereof.

Rom. 13. 14.

Gal. 5. 16.

1 Pet. 2. 11.

1 Cor. 15. 55.

2, The Law of death, by which sin damned and condemned is now of none effect, for by Christ the sting of death is taken out. Both which the Apostle punctually and comfortably hath thus expressed. *Rom. 8. 1. 2.* *There is no condemnation to those which are in Christ Jesus, who live not after the flesh but after the Spirit. For the Law of the Spirit of life, which is in Christ, hath freed them from the Law of sin and death. And upon it he sings his *ὕμνος*, or song of Triumph, vers. 33. Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that dyed, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us.*

To believe then the remission of sins, is to believe those two great fundamental doctrines of Justification and Sanctification.

Which in brief is this,

1, That God graciously and freely, without any merit or desert on our part, gave his Son to dy for the world.

Rom. 3. 24.

2, That for his meritorious death and passion he remits the fault, absolves from the guilt, and acquits from punishment all penitent and believing sinners.

2 Cor. 5. 19.

Acts 2. 38.

2 Cor. 5. 21.

Phil. 3. 9.

3, That imputing to them the obedience of his own son, and his Righteousness, accounts them just in his sight.

4, That all who are justified, and thus acquitted, have holiness in some degree, according to the condition of this life, inherent in them. Which though it cannot wholly discharge from sin, yet it frees from the Dominion of sin, so that no justified person yields himself a slave and a Vassal to sin, but resists its commands, mortifies, crucifies it, and makes it dye daily. He that hath this hope; purifies himself, *1 John 3. 3.*

2 Cor. 7. 1.

Rom. 8. 5, 6.

Col. 3. 3, 5.

Rom. 6. 5, 6.

2 Cor. 3. 17.

2 Cor. 5. 18.

And that of this Article we might have the greater security; God hath committed to his Ministers the word of Reconciliation, to effect which, all, that he hath left in their hand and power, especially tends.

John 15. 3.

1. His word he hath committed unto them, and that hath a cleansing power. *Now you are clean by the Word I have spoken unto you—* Preach they must, and the main part of their doctrine is Repentance, and Remission of sin, *Luke 24. 47.*

Numb. 16. 46

25. 11

Psal 106. 30.

2. They are to pray, *ex officio*, and one part of their prayer is *Intercession*; to stand betwixt the Temple and Altar, and Cry, *Spare thy people, O Lord spare thy people, Joel*, 2. 17. *Aaron, Phineas*, stood in the gap, and made atonement: and the Presbyters are to be called to pray over the sick person, that the sin he hath committed may be forgiven, *1am. 5. 14*

Acts 2. 38.

Matt. 26. 28.

3. Come to the Sacraments, of which they are the Ministers, two they are, and both have Remission of sins annexed to them, that is the grace assured by these Seals. *Go and Baptize all Nations for Remission of sins*, that's the Promise made to Baptism. *This is my blood of the New Testament shed for you, and for many, for the Remission of sins*: that's the Grace of the Eucharist.

4. Lastly, to the Priests hand he hath delivered a key, and the use of it is for the detention and remission of sin, *whose sins you remit, they are remitted*, John 20. 23.

Cast but up all this, and you shall see to what it will amount. The total will set forth unto us the infinite Justice and Mercy of God about sin. His Justice (that would not pardon a Sinner without satisfaction, first made. His Mercy and Readiness yet to grant a pardon, that he would give his Son to purchase a Remission for us; And that to pass over the Security to us, he hath left us his word to publish his will about it, instituted Sacraments to seal it, ordained us Priests, and left keys in their hands, to administer it. That so by the words dropt from their lips, by the prayers offered by their devout and charitable hearts, by the Sacraments consecrated by their hands, by

the keys left in their office, the full pardon and remission of sin might be made known, obtained, sealed and delivered over to sinners,

The Practical part of this Article.

- 1, To be thankful to God for our pardon. Rom. 7. 24, 25.
- 2, To give him the sole glory of the purchase: acknowledging it to be his mere mercy, to send his Son for that end. Rev. 5. 8, 9, 10.
Psal. 137. 5, 6.
- 3, Never to forget his mercy, that would while we were yet sinners, offer us pardon and grace. Rom. 5. 10, 11.
- 4, To set our selves seriously to perform the condition, on which remission is promised and purchased for us, without which our pardon can never be secured to us. Rev. 2. 5.
Acts 13. 48.
- 5, To continue in good hope, and never despair, that if we do our part, God will not fail to do his. John 14. 1, 2.
- 6, To pray to God daily for Mercy and Remission. Mat. 6. 12.
- 7, Highly to esteem all those waies and means, which God hath ordained in his Church to convey this pardon and remission to us. Phil. 2. 29.
4. 8.
Met. 13. 44, 45, 46.

Art. II: I believe the Resurrection of the Body.

Resurrectio mortuorum, fiducia Christianorum. The Resurrection of the dead was the hope of the Fathers, and is the expectation of Christians: *For if the dead rise not, we are of all men most miserable, our faith is vain, our preaching is vain.* Tertul.
1 Cor. 15. 17, 18, 19.

We in this Article then confess, that there shall be a future restauration, or rising again of this same flesh of ours out of the Grave, which being arrested by death, was laid up in that prison, so that all the dead are Prisoners of hope, that a day of delivery will come, when their bodies, secured in their tombs, shall be set free from this bondage of corruption.

- 1, The time when this shall be done, is at the last day, when the Lord himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, and with the voice of the Arch-Angel, and with the Trumpet of God, and the dead in Christ shall rise first. 1 Thes. 4. 14, 15.

2. This is an Act of Power, for it shall be done by the power of God, and of Christ.

1. As it proceeds from the power of God, so it shall have its effect upon all men, good and bad alike, for all must appear, and receive according to what they have done in their body, whether good or bad, Ezek. 37. The dry bones came again together, and lived again, but it was the power of Gods Spirit that did it; and the Apostle making mention of this act, Phil. 3. 21. referres it meerly to this cause. God shall do by the *evangelium*, that mighty working whereby he is able to subdue all things to himself.

2. But as it proceeds from Christ, or the Spirit of Christ: so it shall have its effect upon the body of the Saints onely. They are in Christ, as in their head, and the Spirit of Christ is in them, as members of his body, and by this power they shall rise and live. This is that the Apostle teacheth, Rom. 8. 11. *If the Spirit of him, who raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he also shall quicken your mortal bodies.* Observe, that the Apostle saith, shall raise, for the wicked will they, will they, shall be raised, but not by the Spirit of God that dwells in them: It is an act of meer Power, not of Grace; But of those in whom the Spirit of Christ dwells, he speaks otherwise. Their mortal bodies shall be quickned. There needs onely some power to stir, and excite the vital part: which though dull and sluggish, yet remains in them, as it is in trees that have their sap in the root in the depth of Winter, and being quickened, warmed by the heat of the Sun in the Spring, becomes active and shoots up into the branches: so also this seed or principle of life that dwells in the bodies of the Saints, even when they lye in the heart of the earth, being called up by the power of God, shall kindly and sweetly dispose them toward their resurrection. Whereas then all may be said properly to be raised, the Saints in a peculiar sense are said to be quickened, as having a kind of Energy, preserved in their mortal bodies by the Spirit of Jesus. Quickening being the reduction of that to life, that hath life in it.

2. Cor. 15. 45.

3. And as it is an Act of power and must be, for *a privatione totali ad habitum non datur regressus*: so it is an act of Justice also, that the same body arise, and no other, that so that individual body which is a Co-partner in sin, may be punished, and that which doth partake in righteous actions and sufferings, may be rewarded.

The same body, I say, shall arise. The same for substance, but not for qualities, for freed it shall be not onely from sin, but from all defects, *ad naturam non ad injuriam reddimur*. Diseases, blindness, lameness, mutilation, &c. shall be taken away; and most likely it is, that man shall be restored to that integrity and perfection, in which the body of Adam was first created. Job 19. 1 Cor. 15. Tertul.

4. In one word, it shall be a *Spiritual body*, 1 Cor. 15. 43. not moved by a natural principle, but by the Spirit of God, which spiritually consists in this, as Divines have taught. Pet. Mart. in Reg 2. Cap. 6. d Scholast.

1. Immortality. Death shall be no more. *This mortal must put on immortality*, 1 Cor. 15. 53. and of this the reason given is this; when reward and punishment is eternal, the subject of these must be eternal and perpetual also.

2. Glory, splendor, brightness, or clarity. They shall shine as the Sun, Mat. 13. 43. Be like our Saviours body, Phil. 3. 21. *He shall change our vile body, that it may be like his glorious body*, and what the quality of that is, was shewed in his Transfiguration, when his face did shine as the Sun, and his raiment was white as the light, Mat. 17. 2.

3. Agility, nimbleness, quickness. No motion quicker. They shall follow the Lamb whether soever he goeth, which motion in him being very speedy, the motion of their bodies must needs be very speedy also, so that no gravity or ponderosity of the flesh shall be able to retard them. In the book of Wisdom, it is thus expressed. *Wisd. 3. 7. They shall run to and fro as sparks among the stubble*. From Christs Body when he walked on the waters, and when he did ascend to Heaven, as it is conceived, all heaviness was removed, as it shall be in the Saints of God at the last day, when they shall meet the Lord in the Aire. Rev. 14. 4. 1 Thef. 4. 17

1 Cor. 15. 42,
43, 44.

4, Impassibility, nor cold, nor heat, nor diseases, nor griefs, nor passions, shall molest them, or disturb them. *It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.* As for those passions and senses, which perfect the nature of man, and helps it, no way hurt it: These shall remain after the Resurrection, but so ordered and regulated, that man from them shall receive no prejudice.

5 Subtilty, which is not so to be understood, as if the bodies of the Saints should be turned into an airy body, but all grossness and feculency shall be transparent as the Sun, and shall as near come unto the nature of a Spirit, as it is possible for a body; *It is sown a natural, but it shall be raised a spiritual body.* 1 Cor. 15. 43.

The Practical Part.

1, To keep our bodies in a rising condition, not polluting these Temples of the Holy Ghost, with sloth, drunkenness, lust, or spot of sin, but in all purity, and sobriety to prepare them for this heavenly condition, which we expect.

9. 27.

2, That since they shall be spiritual, we inure them to the directions of the Spirit, and make them tame and tractable to comply with it.

3, That we comfort our selves in our death, and in the departure of our friends, with what is written, *Job 19. 25.* 1. *Thes. 4.* from 13. to the end.

4, That we suffer patiently even to death, for if we suffer with, and for him, we shall reign with him, *Rom. 8. 17.* *Job 49. 27.*

Rev. 22. 30.
1 Thes. 3. 6, 13
Heb. 11. 40.

5, That we pray to God for the consummation of all things, that they whose Souls are at rest, may have their bodies joynted to their Souls, that they with us, and we with them may be perfect.

6, That we be thankful to God for his revelation and promise, which was unknown to the Heathen, and being preached unto them, seemed ridiculous: *Acts 17. 18.* and 32.

And

Art: 12. And the life everlasting.

All, good and bad must receive their bodies again, and rise: but the condition of good and bad is not the same: *For they that have done evil, shall rise to the resurrection of judgment, or damnation: But they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life, John 5. 24, 25, 29.*

Rev. 20. 13, 13

In this Clause is set forth unto us the happy state of those that dye in the Lord, who after this life, shall have everlasting life.

Our life in this world is soured with two Conditions.
1. It is short, momentary, finite. 2. It is full of misery, trouble, sorrow, care, anxiety: so that it cannot be rightly called *vita vitalis*, because *non est vivere, sed valere vita*. Upon which ground, we call the life of damned spirits a death: because, though they live, and live for ever, yet they live not well, they live in pain and sorrow. That life which is reserved for Gods servants, is free from both these inconveniences.

1. For it is everlasting, an infinite, endless estate, and then, nor short, nor momentary, John 3. 16. and

Mat. 25. 20.

5 11. 1. Pet. 3. 4,

Rev. 14. 13.

2. And it is properly a life, a life of joy, a life of rest, content, peace, bliss, felicity.

Psal. 16. 11.

17. 15.

Mat. 5.

And this felicity is, in Scripture, set out unto us two ways.

1. Negatively, or privatively, Rev. 7. 16. They shall hunger and thirst no more, neither shall the Sun

appt. By removing of evil.

give light to them, or any heat, Rev. 21. 4. God shall wipe all tears from their eyes, and there shall be no more death, nor sorrow nor crying, nor pain. No more curse, Rev. 22. 3. No night then, verse 5. Any thing that might abate, allay, or retard their happiness, shall be removed.

2. Affirmatively, or positively, which felicity is of two kinds.

appt. By position or setting us in all good.

1. Essential, that consists in the vision of God,

1 Cor. 13. 12. who being the fountain of perfection

on

on, must necessarily from him receive all perfection.

1 Cor. 3. 9.

Is. 64. 4.

- 2, Accessory; joy, security, rest, honour, and those happinesses before mentioned, to glorified bodies. In a word, that which *eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither hath it entered into the heart of man to conceive*, that God hath prepared for them that love him.

The Practical part.

2 Cor. 5.

Phil. 3.

Rom. 8. 18.

1. That we weigh and ponder these two estates together, this life, and that we hope for in Heaven: the shortness of this, and the continuance of that: the trouble of this, and the rest in that: And therefore we never forfeit that eternal bliss, or incur the danger of eternal wo, for any transitory joy, honor, gain, ease: No, not to enjoy that happiness, we refuse not the cross it self.

Heb. 12. 1, 2.

2. *Momentum est hoc unde pendet Aeternitas*. True it is, that this life is but a moment, but yet such a moment, that our eternal well-being receives its rise and first motion from it. *This day*, saith our Saviour to *Zachens*, *is Salvation come to this house*. This day, i.e. That very day, when *Zachens* became a Convert. Wisdom then it will be so to improve every moment of this present life, that it may be a foundation for eternity.

Luke 19. 9.

John 5. 34.

The End of the Explication of the CREED.

THE



The Second Part
OF THE
CHURCH-CATECHISM,
THE
TEN COMMANDMENTS,

And the Exposition of them;

In which is taught the Duty of Obedience
to God, and to Man.



OU say your Godfathers, and God-mothers
did promise for you in your Baptism, that
you should keep Gods Commandments.

Tell me how many there be?

Ans^r. *Ten*. Which for this reason is
called the Decalogue, or Ten words. And the breviare
of these Ten in the Gospel is Love. *Thou shalt love the Lord
thy God, and thy neighbor as thy self.* Luk 10. 27. *Love* is a
debr, and it is the fulfilling of the Law. Rom. 13. 8, 10.
This Law is sometimes called the Law of Nature,
sometimes the Moral Law, and sometimes the Law of
Moses.

1. It is called the Law of Nature, because the good or
evil actions commanded or prohibited in it, may be re- Rom. 2. 14, 15.

M

solved

Dr. Francisc. solved into some dictates, or principles of natural reason, *White, de Sab.* imprinted in mans heart at the Creation.
Pag. 29, 30.

1. The commands of the first Table require Fidelity, Reverence, Honour, Worship to be rendred to the Almighty God: and they forbid Idolatry, Superstition, Blasphemy, Prophaneness. Now all these Duties are grounded, and may be resolved into some dictates and principles of reason, and therefore we may well call the Law, that regulateth these actions, Natural.

For because the true and everlasting God, is the supreme Lord and Governor of the whole world, and of man in particular; and because man hath his being, his power, his preservation, his well-being and happiness from him: and further yet, because man is in such manner subject to God, as that this great Lord and King hath absolute power over him, so that he can save and destroy him, reward and punish him, according to his own will and good pleasure:

Upon these grounds and reasons it is most just, safe and beneficial, according to the Rule of Natural understanding, that man, being Gods Creature, Subject, Servant: do render unto his Supreme Lord, Protector, Creator, Governor: fidelity, service, fear, reverence, obedience, love.

2. The duties of the Second Table are as easily resolved into principles drawn from Nature and Reason, which is this, Do as you would be done by. Being a superior, you expect to be honoured, not dishonoured. Therefore honour, and do not dishonour a Superior. Wronged no man would be, in his life, in his wife, in his goods, or good name; therefore in these, saith Reason, wrong not another. Cover not thy neighbors wife, goods, &c. Because thou thy self art offended, if another man should cover thine. Evident then it is, *Eadem Dei & natura vox*, that the voice of God and Nature in these things is the same, *Rom. 2. 14.*

2. It is called the Moral Law, because it belongs *ad mores*, being a just Rule or measure imposed by God, directing and binding to the obedience of things holy, honest and

and just, *Rom. 7. 12.* It teacheth us to live *righteously soberly, godly in this present world,* and to avoid all ill manners that are contrary to these,

3. It is called the Law of *Moses*, because that *Moses* after the first Tables in which they were written by Gods own finger, were broken by him, *Exod. 31. 19.* they were by Gods command by *Moses* written again, and by him delivered to the children of *Israel*, for a perpetual and a standing Law.

Exod. 34. 27.
28.

To be a perpetual and a standing Law, I say, for though by Christ the curse and malediction were taken away: for it hath no power to condemn those who are in Christ, *Rom. 3. 19. and 8. 1. and 33.* Yet the obligation yet remains; for Christ came not to destroy the Law, but to fulfil it *Mat. 5. 17.* and in the same chapter imposeth it. But I say unto you, &c. And the Apostles establish the Law. *1 Job. 2. 4. Rom. 12. 7, 14, and 3. 31. and urge the Law, as a Rule for good and evil. 1 Cor. 9. 9. Ephes 6. 1. 1 Cor. 14. 21. Jam. 2. 8, 9, 11.*

Quest. What then dost thou chiefly learn out of this Law, or in these Ten Commandments.

Ans. I learn Two things.

1. My duty towards God.
2. My duty towards my neighbor.

Quest. How many Commandments teach you your Duty to God?

Ans. The Four first Commandments, so that this first part of the Law seems to me not unlike the River that went out of *Eden*, to water *Paradise*, and from thence it was parted, and became into Four heads.

1. The first teacheth us the duty we are to perform to God inwardly, From the heart to acknowledge him for God, our God, and to be but one God.
2. The Second sets us a Rule for our outward Religious adoration, that we fall down before him, and him alone as God. And abhorre the Adoration of all Idols and Images,
3. The Third directs our Tongue and Speech, that

we acknowledge his Name to be holy and reverend, and therefore take it not into our mouths in vain.

4. The Fourth commands us to set out a sufficient and convenient time to his service, especially to observe that day that is appointed to that purpose.

And the manner how these duties are to be performed, are with all the heart, all the soul, all the strength. *Luke 10. 27.* With the heart, that is, freely and cordially, not out of Coaction, or compulsion: with the soul, that is, understandingly, not ignorantly, and out of custome: strength, that is, so far as we can, not lazily, remissly, coldly. Lastly, with all these, for God will have all, or none at all; he will admit of no co-partner, or corral in his service.

Quest. How many Commandements teach you your duty to your neighbor? that is, to any one that bears the face of a man.

Ans. The six last called the Second Table.

Superior, and your duty to him, is enjoyned in the Fifth Command. *Honour thy Father and Mother.*

This neighbor is either a

- | | |
|--|---|
| Inferior or
equal; and
he may not
be wrong'd, | 1. In his own person. Com. 6. |
| | 2. In his wives person. Com. 7. |
| | 3. In his Goods. Com. 8. |
| | 4. In his good Name. Com. 9. |
| | 5. In purpose or intent, motion or design. Com. 10. |

But before we come to interpret every one of these Laws in particular, some general rules are necessary to be set down, which being understood and remembred, will give great light and ease to the interpretation of the whole; and they are these.

- Job. 5. 23, 24.* 1. Such as the Law-giver is, such is his Law: but he is a Spirit, and therefore the Law is spiritual, and reacheth unto the powers of the Soul, and chargeth the hearts and thoughts
- Mat. 22. 37.*

thoughts with obedienc, as well as the outward man, Humane Laws bind the hand and tongue: the Divine, the heart. It chargeth the Understanding to know every Duty, the Memory to retain every Duty, the Will to chuse the better and leave the worse, the Affections to love what God loves, and hate what he hates.

Joh. 19. 7.
Heb. 10. 16.

2. *Nullum preceptum consistit in indivisibili.* A great latitude then every precept hath, and though brief in words, is very large in contents, far more being commanded, or forbid, than is named. For the extension of any command, observe,

1. That every command is both affirmative and Negative: under the affirmative, all duties that can be reduced to that *Precept* are commanded, and all the breaches forbidden: and under the negative all the breaches are forbidden, and all the contrary duties commanded.

Mat. 5. 21,
&c.
Mat. 4. 10.
Ephes. 4. 31,
32.

2. In any precept, whensoever a duty or a sin is commanded or forbidden, all the degrees of that sin or duty, all the causes, antecedents, consequents, circumstances, occasions, provocations, furtherances, are commanded or forbidden also.

1 Thes. 5. 22
Mat. 25. 27, 30.

3. That every commandement is to receive interpretation from the end: For, *Finis dat amabilitatem, mensuram, ordinem mediis*, The end stirs up love, sets a measure and order to the means, as, *Thou shalt not kill*; the end is for the preservation of mans life, and the restraint of cruelty. Here then a man is bound to fly whatsoever shall hurt, and to do whatsoever may preserve the life of man: and the like is to be said of the rest.

3. That the Negative bind, *semper & ad semper*, i. e. they oblige perpetually, and may upon no occasion, and at no time be dispensed with: as, *Thou shalt not kill*, *Thou shalt not steal*, &c. Always, and in all places bind: for they are acts of sin, and cannot in any time or place be well done. But the affirmative bind not *ad semper*, to all times: but are to be performed readily, and with a willing mind at all hours and seasons, when matter and circumstances require them to be done. Thus those com-

1 Thes. 5. 17. *monds are to be understood, Pray always, Give thanks always, Rejoyce in the Lord always, &c.* that is, h. bitually, or in a ready disposition of Mind and Will, not absolutely always. For there is a time to labor as well as to pray, and a time when God will have mercy and not sacrifice.

Mat 9. 13.
Hof. 6. 6.

4. That most of the Commands are given in a Negative form, to put us in mind of our inclination to ill that ought very greatly to be restrained, and first rooted out, before we can be capable to do good, *Cease from evil first, then learn to do good.*

Isai. 1. 16, 17.

5. That they are given in the Second person singular. *Thou shalt have no other Gods &c.* that no man shift off the command from himself, as if it concerned him not. For tis an usual put-off, That which is spoken to all, is esteemed as spoken to none.

6. That they are given in the future tense, as being not onely given to them who then lived, but to all succeeding generations.

Deut. 6. 7.

7. That the Five first have reasons added to them is
1. That we may know that our own reason is much darkned, and must be quickned before we shall do our duty cordially, to God and our Superiors.
2. That we know that God puts nothing upon us, but what is reasonable, and such, as if we hearken to reason, we shall judge fit to be done.
3. That these reasons drawn from rewards and punishments are most powerful.

8. But among all reasons, that are prefixed in the peface, *I am the Lord thy God, &c.* must needs be most efficacious, and of largest influence. For he that shall truly lay that to heart, that it is God, his God that commands, cannot chuse but be ready to obey.

The Preface to the Commandments.

The same which the Lord spake in the 20th chapter of Exodus, saying: *I am the Lord thy God, which brought thee out of the Land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.*

Catech.

By this Preface.

1. There

1. There is first a terror stricken into us, that we take heed to what follows. For these are not the words of a mortal man, but of the eternal God. The same, the very self same, which *Jehovah* spoke in Lightning, and Thunder, and the voice of a Trumpet drowning that Thunder, upon Mount *Sinai*, when the Smoke ascended, the Fire flamed, and the Mountain trembled, and all the Glory of Heaven was turned into terror. God, by publishing his Law in this manner, would have all, to whom it was given, know, that they have not to deal with an impotent Law-giver, that can more easily command than punish; but with such a Potentate that can command Heaven, Earth, Fire, Air, in revenge of the breach of his Law, for the breach of this, he will call all men to an account: and if he were so terrible in proclaiming, how fearful will his presence be, when he comes as a Judge to call for an account of this Law? That day will be full of horror to all Rebels. *Heb. 12 18, &c.*

2. A ground laid for obedience, in the following words, in which consider,

1. That he is the Lord, *Jehovah* *ô* *ô*. A Lord absolute and independent, one of himself, all other things being from him in Creation, Direction, Preservation. At all times, in all places a munificent, bountiful Lord. A Lord that had power and authority enough to make a Law. Such a Lord then ought to be heard, when he speaks to his servants, and they are to obey him.

2. If this reason from his greatness move not, then he labors to gain their and our attention and good will from his goodness; that this great Lord, was their God, *I am the Lord thy God*, Thy God by covenant with *Abraham*. 2, Thy God by propriety. The Nations had every one their Gods and Idols, but he was the God of *Israel*, and whom should a people hear speak, but their God?

3. Lastly, to gain attention, he puts them in mind, how lately he brought them out of *Egypt*, a house of bondage. And these reasons are as powerful to move us to be obedient to this Law, as they could be to *Israel*. For he

is our Lord, as he was theirs, and then we being his servants must hear him speak, and obey him. He is our good God that hath made a covenant with us before many Nations of the earth, why then should we not observe his Statutes, and keep his Laws? the delivery indeed from Pharaoh and the Egyptian bondage literally concerns Israel, but he hath bestowed upon us a greater favour, sent us a more beneficial deliverance, having translated us out of the Kingdom of darkness, into the kingdom of his dear Son, and enlightened us that sate in darkness, and in the shadow of death. A benefit that ought never to be forgotten, and never to be requited with disobedience and rebellion to his Laws.

Egypt signifies darkness, and may aptly be a type of sin, which is a work of darkness. 1. Either because it is committed against God who is light, by the suggestion of the Prince of darkness. 2. Or because too often committed in the dark. *They that sleep, sleep in the night, and they who are drunk, are drunk in the night.* 1 Thes. 5. 7.

3. Or else because it deserves to be punished with eternal darkness.

The Devil is too like Pharaoh, that hath always sought to kill the male-children of Christianity in the birth: of which purpose when he failed, he loaded the backs of the Primitive Christians with rods, and hard tasks, never ceasing till he pursued them to death. From which when it pleased God to deliver his people, and give them rest, when he sets upon them with another stratagem, and labours to bring them under again by transforming himself into an Angel of light: so that if possible by any means he may make them his Captives and Bondslaves to sin.

But from this darkness, from this Tyrant, from this slavery, the Lord our God hath delivered us. And our deliverance exceeds that of Israel in three respects. 1 Theirs was from the captivity of their bodies: ours from the bondage of our souls. 2 Theirs from Egypt onely, and the tyranny of man: ours from hell and the tyranny of the devil. 3 They were redeemed by strength of arm, by signs, and wonders, without any price at all: but he bought and paid

Col. 1. 13.

Luke 1. 79.

Mst. 25. 30.

2 Cor. 13. 14.

2 Tim. 2. 26.

1 Pet. 1. 18, 19.

paid for us with his own blood: *Iustitia opus erat, non potentia*. It was a work of Justice rather than Power.

As therefore our deliverance was greater, the benefit is greater, and the means by which it was done more miraculous: so it should cast upon us a stronger obligation to hear and doe whatsoever our Lord God shall command us.

And now harken to what he commands:

The first Commandment.

Thou shalt have no other Gods before me.

At this time, when *Israel* came out of *Egypt*, all Nations had corrupted their wayes before God, and though Atheism had not prevailed, nor doth yet over any whole Nation. For *nulla gens tam barbara, &c.* there never was any Nation so barbarous, which did not acknowledge, and worship some God or other; yet, among the *Chaldeans*, *Philistims*, *Egyptians*, their gods were multiplied, and were according to the number of their Cities: at last the number of the Heathen gods grew so great, that *Varro* reckons up 3000. That then the *Israelites*, or Gods people, for the future, should not chuse and adore any strange gods: it pleased the God of Heaven to give this straight charge, *Thou shalt have no other gods before me.*

Cic. de natura Deorum.

From the end, it must receive its interpretation. And the end is, that God alone over his peop'e bear rule, and wholly enjoy his Authority. And to effect this end, he commandeth all impiety, and all false opinions, concerning his Deity, to be far removed from us: and he enjoyneth himself to be worshipped and adored by us in the true practise of godlines.

Commanded we are here,

- 1, To have a God: in that is Religion.
- 2, To content our selves with one God, and no more: In that is Unity.
- 3, To have the true God for our God, and no other: In this is Truth. So that, God commands us here

N

to

to be Religious, and to embrace one true Religion.

1 Cor. 13.

The chief Acts of which are reduced } Faith,
to these heads, } Hope,
Love.

1, Faith, by which we know, assent and trust to God. Infidelity, ignorance, doubting, error, heresy, apostacy, are enemies to Faith.

2, Hope is an expectation of those things which God hath promised. Despair, impatience, murmuring, and presumption are inconsistent with hope.

3, Love is an affection that ariseth from the goodness of God. And the opposites to it are, The love of the world, the love of a mans self, prophanenels, superstition, base and servile fear.

The Duties then of this Commandment are in respect of

1. Faith.

a Jer. 9. 24.
Hos. 13. 4.
Psal. 143. 8.
b Prov. 1. 4, 7,
22. 29.

1, a To know God, for, if we know not God, we neither can believe in him, hope for any thing from him, nor love, nor worship him, &c. Take away knowledge, and take away all b

2, That we know God, as he hath revealed himself in his Word, and his Works, John 17. 3. To acknowledge him to be such a God in his essence, in his attributes, in his Persons, as the Scriptures have taught us.

e 2 Chron. 10.
20.

Isa. 26. 1, 2.

d Hab. 3. 16.

Psal. 4. 4.

Pl. 22. 4, 5, 8, 9.

e Amos 3. 8.

Eph. 4. 14.

f Zeph. 3. 12.

Isa. 38. 21.

g Matt. 4. 4.

Rom. 4. 21.

Heb. 6. 18.

3, e To believe all his Revelations, to adhere to his Promises, to stand in aw of his d Judgments, and to tremble at his e Threats, and to obey his Directions.

4, f To put our whole confidence in him, and continually to depend upon him and his Providence.

5, g To proceed toward our lawful ends, by such means as he hath appointed.

And those are the main acts of Faith,
which is grounded especially on Gods
Veracity, Omnipotency.

2, Hope

3. *Hope.*

- 6, *a* That with patience we submit to the Will of God in all things; *Mat. 6. 10.*
 7, *b* That with alacrity we undergo afflictions, and do not fret our selves and murmur under the cross, *Isay 30. 15.*
 8, *c* That we seek not revenge, but commit our cause to him that judgeth righteously.
 9, *d* That we joy and delight in God, *Heb. 3. 6.* 1 *Pet. 1. 3, 6.*

And these are the main Acts of hope, which are grounded on Gods Mercy and Truth, his Immutability, Justice.

3. *Charity or Love.*

- 10, *a* That we love God above all things, and for himself; *Deut. 6. 5. & 10. 12.*
 11, *b* That we obey him, and fear him, and be zealous for him.
 12, *c* To esteem, prize, and value God more than all.
 13, *d* To do any thing, or suffer any thing rather then displease him.
 14, *e* To be afraid to loose his favour, and grieve for his absence.
 15, To have a care to recover his love again, *Psa. 132. 4.*
 16, Not to think the time long we serve him.
 17, *e* To hunger and thirst after him, and his sanctifying Spirit.
 18, *f* To resist and hate sin, receive grace, and improve it.
 19, *g* To desire the perpetual vision of God. *Psa. 42.*

All these are the main Acts of Love, and they are grounded upon Gods goodness and mercy.

Farther yet, out of these three Theological vertues, and the consideration of Gods Attributes arise,

- 1, Invocation, when in our necessities by instant Prayer we call upon him.

N 2

2, Hum-

a 1 Cor. 6. 20.

Psal. 95. 6.

b Psal. 95. 1, 2,
&c.

c Psal. 56. 1, 2, 3.

Psal. 58.

d Phil. 115. 1.

Heb. 9. 23, 24.

2, a Humble Adoration, when with all submissiveness we adore and worship him.

3, b Thanksgiving, when with a grateful heart we bless him, and praise him for his manifold mercies.

4, c Praise, when we think and speak honorably of God, recount and magnifie his waies and works, and confess his Attributes, and Perfections.

5, d Humiliation of heart, to ascribe nothing to our own power. Nothing to our own merits, but to let God have all the glory.

Now all these Duties must be done, ^{Sincerely,}
^{Constantly,}

e Sincerely, without hypocrisie, and constantly, without fainting: Which may be easily collected out of these words,

e Heb. 10. 23,

24.

Josh 24. 14.

2 Cor. 12. 2, 17

Coram me, Before me.

1, The service we do, is before his face, in his eye, in his presence, and therefore must be entire and sincere: for if it have any hypocrisie or mixture of base ends in it, he will reject it. He is a witness and spectator of all our hearts and counsels: and therefore it behoves us to see that our religion be such, as that eye will approve that looks into the secret recesses of the heart.

2, It requires that our religious duties be constant also, for *gnal panai*, before me, oftentimes signifies continuance of time: as *Numb. 3. 4.* Eleasar and Ithamar minister in the priests office, *gnal pene Aharon*, that is, Aaron being yet alive. So *1 Sam. 31. 1.* *Deut. 21. 16.* The sence then, ye shall have no other gods before me, is, so long as I am, so long as I live. But I am alive and live for ever, therefore be a constant servant unto me, and serve for ever.

f Rev. 2. 21.

Jer. 11. 20. &

17. 10.

g Gal. 6. 9.

Eph. 6. 13, 14.

The sins and offenders against this Commandment are,

1. Against Faith.

1, They, who, as the fool, *Psal. 14.* Say in their heart there is no God.

: 2. a They

2, *a* They which know not God, and are wilfully ignorant of the Laws of God, that they may sin with confidence. *a* Jer. 4. 22. Job 21. 14.

3, *b* They who stagger in the faith, are doubtful, and dis-believe what he hath revealed, and despise any of Gods precepts. *b* 1 Pet. 2. 7, 8. 1 John 5. 10.

4, *c* They who are Apostates from the truth of Religion. *c* 2 Pet. 2. 1, 20. Titus 1. 14.

5, *d* They who dis-believe any Articles of the Creed, and are Hereticks. *d* Gal. 1. 6. Heb. 10. 25.

6, *e* They which rend the unity of Religion, and are Schismatiques. *e* 1 John 2. 18, 19.

7, *f* They who pass away their time securely, as if there were no God, and are practical Atheists, and prophane persons. *f* 1 Thel. 5. 6, 7. 2 Pet. 2. 1, 10. ad 22.

8, *g* They who use Charms, Sorceries, Inchantments, Witch-crafts, predict fortunes, that give themselves to the Devil, and make contracts with him, invoke Angels, Saints, or evil spirits, or any other Creature. *g* Deut. 18. 11. Lev. 20. 6. Col. 2. 18. 1 Cor. 10. 20, 21.

9, *h* They that pray to unknown or false gods, these are Idolaters. *h* 1 John 5. 21. Ephel. 5. 5.

10, *i* They that relye, and trust upon any thing or means more then God, and preferre any service before his will. *i* 2 Chro. 16. 9, & 12.

11, *k* They that tempt God, and rely upon his protection against his Rules, and without his promise, promising themselves security and success, in a way which the word of God will not warrant. *k* Mar. 4. 6, 7.

12, *l* They that make Religion to serve ill ends, or do good to evil purposes, or do evil under a pretence of good. *l* Gen 34. 14. 15. 2 Sam. 15. 7.

13, *m* They that walk in forms and shadows of Religion, but deny the power of godliness. These are Hypocrites. *m* Rom. 3. 7, 8. 2 Tim 3. 5. 2 Pet 2. 20.

2. Hope.

14, *a* They who are impatient, and repine and murmur at the prosperity of the wicked, and submit not to the Will of God. *a* 1 Cor. 10. 10. Psal. 73. 3, 12, 13.

- b* Gal. 6. 12. 15, *b* They that deny God and Religion, rather than
 Mat. 19. 21, 22. they will take up the cross and follow Christ.
c Plal. 2. 11. 16, *c* They who do not serve God with a joyful heart.
d Isa. 7. 12. 17, *d* They who presume upon Gods mercy, *Job.* 2. 33.
e Gen. 4. 13. 18, *e* They who despair of his mercy and protection.
 19, They who are so proud that they care not for God.
Exod. 5. 2. *Jer.* 50. 29. *Psal.* 10. 4.

3. *Love.*

- a* Rom. 24. 5. 20, *a* They who accuse God of severity or remissness.
 1. 30. 2 *Pet.* 3. 3.
b Josh. 24. 24. 21, *b* They who do not obey, love, fear God, nor are
c Rom. 8. 7. zealous for him.
 Luke 19. 22. 22, *c* They who do not esteem of God as they ought,
 17. 8. nor desire him.
d Ezec. 44. 7. 23, *d* They who do not hate sin, nor labor to be recon-
 Jer. 8. 4, 5, 6. ciled to him. *Psal.* 143. 6. & 42. 1.
e Matth. 25. 14. 24, *e* They who do not improve his grace, and thirst af-
 Iohn 7. 37. ter his Righteousness. *Psa.* 63. 1.
f Plal. 109. 4. 25, *f* They who do not pray to him, nor praise, nor
 1 *Pet.* 2. 9. thank him.
 Rom. 1. 21. 26, *g* They who arrogate the glory of any action or
g Acts 12. 23. power to themselves, and give not the glory to God.
 Mar. 2. 2. *Rev.* 16. 9.
 Dan. 4. 29, 30.

The Second Commanment.

Thou shalt not make to thy self any graven Image, nor the likeness of any thing that is in the Heaven above, nor in the Earth beneath, nor in the waters under the Earth: Thou shalt not bow down to them, nor worship them, &c.

Deut. 4. 15, 16,
17, &c.

As in the first Commandment God did condemn all false gods: so he doth in this second forbid all false external worship. In that, we are taught whom we are to worship, viz. the one true God. In this, how we are to worship him, viz. not after our own inventions, but as he hath commanded in his Word.

The duties of this Commandment are learned from the intents of it; for, 1. It was directed against the false ado-
rati-

ratio ns of the Heathen, who believed the Images of their gods to be filled with their Deity. 2. And it was a caution to all men, to prevent those low imaginations they might have to think God to be like to man. 3. And a prescription for Gods worship.

In it take notice of the { Precept, *Thou shalt not make.*
 { Sanction, *For I the Lord, &c.*

1. The Precept { 1. Against the making an Image.
 is double, { 2. Against the worshipping, being made.

1. The former part of the Precept is illustrated by a double distribution.

1. Of the kinds of Images, graven or painted: graven maffy Images, molten out of any metal, or carved in wood, or stone: or painted, being the *effigies* or resemblance of the Deity.

This Command is not so strictly to be understood, as if the Art of Carving or Painting were unlawful: which is attributed to Gods Spirit, *Exod. 31. 1.* And of which we have the draughts in the *Cherubims*, and other utensils, and ornaments of the Temple: But it must be understood *secundum subjectam materiam*, according to that matter about which the Commandment was given, *viz.* the representation of the Deity, and because the attempts of men were to represent this (*make us Gods that may go before us*) therefore God prohibits here any such attempt. Which *Exod. 32. 1.* more seriously any man thinks of, the more foolish it must needs be. For, what can be more vain, then to go about to shape a body to an incorporeal substance; to make that essence, which is invisible, the object of the eye; to liken him that is a Spirit, to a poor man, nay worse, a beast, a bird, a fish; To confine him who fills all places, in the compass of a little brass, stone, silv. r, gold, form'd according to the pleasure and skill of the work-man? He that goes about to do this, as did *Demetrius*, *Acts 19.* is an Idolatour materially. Which is here first forbidden. *Non facies tibi.*

2, The second part of the distribution is, *Nor the likeness of any thing in Heaven above, nor in the Earth beneath, nor in the*

Psal. 113. 4, 5.
115. 3, &c.
Isay 40. 25.
44. 7, &c.

the waters under the earth: By which is prohibited the shaping any image after the Heathen manner: In the Heaven they worship the sun, moon, and stars: In the Earth an ox, a calf, a cow, &c. In the Water the crocodile, &c. In a word *πάντα ὅσα ζῆναι ἀνθρώποις*, every thing that could save or kill. And for these they had peculiar names; and these they did represent by symbols, and pictures, and massy Images. Now in any of these forms, and consequently in all, God forbids his people to represent him; which if it be done, is thus far onely material Idolatry.

Exod. 32.

But, there is a higher step of this sin, that which makes it exceeding sinful, Formal-Idolatry, it is, When men fall down, kneel, and worship the Image they make, or is made for them. Aaron made the Calf and was the material Idolatour: but the Israelites which worshipped the Calf that Aaron made, were the formal Idolatours, properly.

*Qui fingit sacros auro, vel marmore vulnus,
Non facit ille Deos: Qui rogat, ille facit.*
Who shapes a God of Gold, of Stone, of Tree,
Makes not the God, he makes that asks, 'tis he.

And this prostration, this adoration, this bowing before them, this worshipping is prohibited by the second clause of this Commandment. *Thou shalt not bow down to them, nor worship them.*

3. To the Command there is annexed *Sancitio*, a reason that hath many reasons in it, to deter men from Idolatry, and to perswade men to bow to, and worship the God of Heaven only: which is the affirmative part of this precept. For he that saith, *Thou shalt not bow down to them*, saith in effect, thou shalt bow down and worship me.

And the reasons are these,

1. That he is *El, fortis Deus*, a strong God, able to punish, able to reward, those that disobey, or obey him; And his strength here is opposed to the vanity of Idols, who can neither hurt nor help: but he can do both.

Is. 40. 35, 36;
24, 25.

2. That

2. That he is *Zelotes*, a God that is jealous of his honor, *Jos. 24. 19.* and will not give it to another: no more endure a rival in his worship, than a husband a co-partner in his bed. *Ezek. 39. 25.* Jealousie is the rage of a man.

3. That for this sin he will visit. It is iniquity and those that are guilty of it, are said here to *hate him*, and his vengeance shall pursue them, and their children, *unto the third and fourth generation*, which we may find verified in all the Kings of *Israel*, and many of *Judah*, and this reason is drawn *à pœna*, and dissuades from bowing to, and worshipping of Images.

4. That in whom the contrary is found; bowing and adoration yielded to him: To these he will be merciful and to their posterity. *I will shew mercy to thousands of them that love me and keep my Commandments.*

Now, whereas God doth assign Four Generations to his wrath, and doth stretch his mercy unto thousands, it is an argument, that of his own nature, he is more bent to shew mercy, than unto severity.

The Commandment being thus Analyz'd, now let us see what is commanded, what forbidden in it.

1. *The Duties commanded are,*

1. To apprehend God as an infinite, incomprehensible Essence without any visible form or shape, and therefore not capable of any representation, by Image, resemblance or picture. *Rom. 1. 23.*

2. To worship God with all bodily worship and external forms of address, and adore him with all humility and reverence, but especially to use those of which we have either precepts or examples in Scripture, or the practice of the Nation or Church we live in. *Jo 4. 24.* *Psal. 95. 7.*

3. To observe religiously and purely, all the substantial and eternal parts of Gods worship: Praying, hearing of the Word, the Sacraments, and the Discipline of the Church. *Pis 30.* *Act 13. 15.*

4. In Gods worship to use such Ceremonies, as serve for,

1. Decency, 1 Cor. 14. 4.
2. Order, 1 Cor. 14. 40. 20. 32.
3. Edification, 1 Cor. 14. 26. Gal. 2. 18.
2. Offenders against this Commandment.

Rom. 1. 23.

1. They that fancy to themselves any likeness of the Deity, except that which is onely Analogical, and lies in his Attributes, and are communicated in some sort to him and his creatures; as Wisdom, Power, Justice, Mercy, Life, &c.

Exod. 32. 6.

2. They that frame any Image or Picture to represent God.

Rev. 14. 9, 10.

Col. 2. 18. 23.

3. They that make or use any Image of Christ, Angel, or Saints, Cross, &c, with a design or address of any religious worship to them, or through them.

Ier. 10. 8.

4. They that worship Idols, or false Gods, or the true God through an Idol.

Psal. 5. 7.

Luk. 18. 13.

5. They that deny to worship God with lowly reverence of their bodies, according as the Church requires reverence externally.

Ecclef. 5. 1, 2.

1 Cor. 11. 4.

10, 17. 10. 22.

6. They who carry themselves rudely, carelessly, irreverently at Prayer, at hearing of the word of God, at the receiving of the Sacraments, or at the execution of Church Discipline, or undervalue and cast aside these Ordinances.

Col. 2. 23.

Mat. 15. 8, 9.

7. Those who worship their own imaginations, and magnify and set up their own inventions under the colour of Religion.

1 Cor. 11. 16.

Rom. 14. 19.

Luk. 7. 31. 10.

36.

8. They that reject all Ceremonies of Order, Decency and Edification.

9. They who regard not Gods threats of vengeance, nor yet are moved with his promises of mercy.

In a word here is forbidden.

Gal. 5. 20

Col. 2. 18, 23.

Act. 25. 19.

1. Idolatry.

ἰδωλατρού.

2. Will-worship.

ἐκλογισμῶν.

3. Superstition { Affirmative }
 { Negative }

ἡσυχασμῶν.

Read

Read those Tracts of Dr. Hammond, which he hath learnedly and judiciously written of these Three.

The Third Commandment.

Thou shalt not take the Name of the Lord thy God in vain, for the Lord will not hold him guiltless, that takes his Name in vain.

The heart of man is deceitful above all things, and by it the tongue is taught to utter lies. After then that God had enjoined the heart to serve him in truth in the former Commandments, in this he lays a Command upon the tongue to be serviceable in truth also.

Ier. 17. 9.
Mat. 15. 19.

1. The propagation of the Gospel, the confession of the Faith, the celebration of Gods ways, Invocation and giving of thanks, are acts to be done by the tongue, and must be really done without collusion, and sincerely without dissimulation, for else in the doing of these we take Gods Name in vain, and break this Command.

2. There be many things also that are necessary for the continuation of the societies of men, as Leagues, Confederacies, Inquisitions about Facts, which can never be transacted without oaths, in which there is a solemn invocation of God, and therefore, in these we may not take Gods Name in vain.

The tongue then in this Commandment is tied to its goodbehaviour, and from the hurt it may do by its falshood to the integrity of Religion and societies of men, security is given, so far forth, as a command from God may do it.

This Commandment hath two parts { 1. A Prohibition.
2. A Commination.

1. The Prohibition is, *Thou shalt not take the Name, &c. in vain.*

1. The Name is that by which any thing is made known, as

1. Here first his Titles, his proper Names, as *Jehovah, Jesus Christ, the Lord our God, El Eloh'm, &c.*

O 2

2. His

2. His Word by which he hath revealed himself, *Pfal.* 132. 3. *Dent.* 18. 19.
3. His Properties or Attributes, *Exod.* 33. 18, 19.
4. His Ordinances, Sacraments, and what relates to his worship.

2. *In vain.*

In vain, that is rashly, foolishly but especially falsely, when our intention at that instant was fallacious, or contradictory to our undertaking, for this is to *speake vanity to our neighbor*, *Pfal.* 12. 2. to lift up the soul to vanity, *Pfal.* 24. 4. that is, to lie to him.

In vain a thing is said to be done, when

1. The Agent is vain, that doth not a thing with his heart.
2. The action is vain, that attains not the end.
3. The end is vain, if any other than intended, *viz.* Gods glory, our own salvation, or our brothers good.

The sum then of this Commandement is this, That we take not, assume not, use not the Name of God, his Attributes, his sacred Word, or any mysteries of Religion, rashly, irreverently, contemptuously, foolishly, prophanely, falsely, to bolster up a lye : But on the contrary, we highly esteem, and with great reverence and sobriety speak of, and use all these; and that under this penalty following,

For the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his Name in vain.

2. This is the Commination. And it is a *periculis* or a *periculis* that speaks less, and means more. *He will not hold him guiltless*, that is, he shall be very guilty, and proceeded against as a guilty person, sometimes in this life, as it hapned to the blasphemer, *Levir.* 24. 10. and is threatened to the perjuror, *Zach.* 5. from ver. 1. to 5. *Eccles.* 23. 9. &c. And if he escape here, yet he shall not at the Tribunal of God : for if an account must be given for every idle word, much more for blaspheming Gods holy and reverend Name.

And

And the reason is this, that if the exaltation and celebration of Gods *Name*, be the ultimate and principal end for which man was created, then it will follow, that it is the greatest evil to dishonor it, and deserves the greatest punishment.

But because it is agreed by all Expositors, that this Commandment was given to regulate Oaths, therefore : I shall speak a little of them.

Of Oaths.

1. That it is lawful to swear, appears in this, In that we are here commanded not to take the Name of the Lord in vain : Again, *Exod. 19. 12. Ye shall not swear by my Name falsely, neither shalt thou defile the Name of the Lord thy God.* Which words, in vain, falsely, defiling, are words of restriction and limitation, and being secluded, intimate that we may swear. At which assertion that no man cavill, in *Deut. 6. 13.* there is a flat Commandment to swear, *Thou shalt fear the Lord thy God, and serve him, and swear by his Name.* So *Jer. 4. 2. Psal. 63. 11. God swears Heb. 6. 13. The Angel swears, Rev. 10. S. Paul swears, Rom. 1. 9. & 9. 1. 2 Cor. 1. 23.*

Lawful then it is, and laudable to swear, for it makes very much for Gods glory ; shewing,

1. That we acknowledg Gods Superiority, for verily a man swears by the greater, *Hebr. 16. 16.*

2. It shews a great faith in us, that we acknowledg by it his presence and veracity ; a witness brought into the Court, that cannot lye, nor be deceived.

3. That what we deliver upon Oath, is, as it were his Testimony, and therefore, if we falsifie any thing,

1. He will bring it to light, *1 Cor. 4. 5.*

2. He will punish it, *Rom. 12. 19.*

In an Oath then we acknowledge a God, his Majesty, his presence, his Truth, his Justice, and therefore it must needs advance his Honour that we swear by his *Name*.

When therefore our Saviour *Matth. 5. 34.* commands, *Swear not at all,* it is not his meaning absolutely to forbid

bid an Oath; but either that Oath, by that which had no Deity in it, as, by the Heaven, the earth, the head, &c. Or else not to apply oaths to trifles, or ordinary Accidents of life; in these our communication should be *Yea, yea, Nay, nay*, that is, simply negative or affirmative. So that our Saviour forbids not all swearing, but swearing in a slight cause.

In a grave, necessary and charitable matter then, we may swear, whether we make a promise, or assert a truth, whence hath proceeded the distinction of an oath into *juramentum Promissorium, Assertorium*.

Mat. 5. 33.

1. A promissory oath is, when by it we engage our selves to do somewhat hereafter, 1 Reg. 1. 17. When this promise is made to a man, it is called properly an oath, when it is to God, it is called a Vow, but the obligation is all one, because made in the Name of God, *Thou shalt perform unto the Lord thy Vows*: And that these be performed, care should be taken, that we make the oath, *de licitis & possibilibus*, of that which is honest and lawful in it self, and what lies in our power.

2. An assertory oath is to be used, when we be called to witness upon a fact either past or present, the truth of which we are bound to affirm or deny upon oath, that the Judge may proceed. And we usually call it a deposition, and is, saith the Apostle, *the end of strife*, Heb. 6. 16. and were it not allowed, the controversies, and questions, and suits of Law were indeterminable.

But that in swearing we take not Gods Name in vain, the Prophet Jer. 4. 2. hath set a threefold hedge about our oaths, *Thou shalt swear, the Lord lives, in truth, justice and judgement*.

1. Truth is commanded, Lev. 19. 12. *Thou shalt not swear by my Name falsely*; 1. In an Assertory oath, that we affirm or deny nothing, but what we know infallibly, evidently, certainly: if the thing be doubtful unto us we affirm it, or deny it as doubtful, and adventure no further than probability. 2. That in a promissory oath, we never promise any impious, unlawful, impossible matter; but

but that which we mean to do, and may perform.

1. Those break this condition, and swear not in *Truth*, who upon oath attest that which is false, or that which they know to be false; or, for *Truth*, that which they doubt to be false, though true. 2. Or they who falsely promise that upon oath, which they never intend to perform. This is to *lift up the mind to vanity*, Pl. 24. 4. or, to swear deceitfully. And this is plain perjury, forbidden *Matt. 5. 33. Lev. 19. 12.*

2. The second condition of an oath is *Justice* or *Righteousness*; so then the matter of our oath must be just, lawful, honest, possible, consonant to the revealed Will of God; and that the cause be also just. 1. There is no Justice in it, to take an oath to deceive, to kill, steal, to rebel &c. Such was the oath of *Herod*, and those that bound themselves with an oath to kill *S. Paul*. 2. And those men are guilty also, who, having engaged themselves by oath or solemn Covenant to perform any duty of a moral Precept, absolve themselves at pleasure, an eye being had to their own gain, honour, interest, or self-preservation. Justice requires, that lawful and possible engagements must be performed. But * in wicked promises rescind thy faith; in a dishonest vow change thy decree; do not that which thou hast vowed unwarily, for it is an impious promise which is made good by wickedness. An oath of piety ought not to be a bond of iniquity.

3. The third condition of an oath is *Judgment*. That the oath be taken with great deliberation, reverence, fear, discretion, care. 1. Remembling that it is the oath of God, a holy thing, and then not to be profaned, and made common. 2. That by it, we bring down God, as I may so say, from Heaven, and set him in the midst making him witness and judge of what is in debate and controversy to decide it.

Nec Deus interfit, nisi dignus vindice nodus — Inciderit.

3. That we do not lie and equivocate. *Juravi lingua, mentem injuratum gero.*

4. That a man be not brought to swear out of love, or lightness, or hatred, or any perturbation of minde, but by

Matt. 14. 7.
Act. 23. 12, 13.

* In malis promissis rescinde fidem, in turpi voto muta decretum, quod incaute vocisti ne facias, impia enim promissio est qua scelere adimplatur. *Isidor.* And it is a most certain rule, that *Juramentum pietatis non debet esse vinculum iniquitatis.*

by a lawful necessity: A man should be brought to swear, as to the sealing of a bond, which is never done but upon necessity, and with an unwilling mind

1. *The Duties of this Command, are,*

- a* Psal. 44. 8. 1, *a* To praise, magnifie, exalt and honour the most holy and reverend Name of God, his Attributes, or that by which he may be known.
 99. 3.
 148. 5.
b Phil. 2. 10, 11. 2, *b* To invocate his Name directly, or by consequence in all solemn and lawful adjurations, and publick oaths.
1 Ph. 5. 19, 20.
Wan. 2. 20.
 3, To honour his Word, his Sacraments, any thing or person, having his Name of stamp upon it, with great regard.
c Deut. 6. 13. 4, *c* To swear by his Name, and onely by it, *Rom.* 1. 9.
 2 *Cor.* 1. 18, 23. *Heb.* 6. 16.
 5, To swear by it in Truth, Justice and Judgment.

2. *The Offences against this Commandment.*

- a* Deut. 28. 58. 1, *a* They who do not praise and exalt the Name of God, offend.
 Psal. 64. 9, 10.
Mic. 4. 5.
1 *Cor.* 10. 31. 2, They that speak of God without Reverence, a great cause, and solemn occasion.
Jer. 4. 2. 3, *b* They that frame curious questions about the nature, actions, and secret decrees of God, nor contenting themselves with his Revelations, *Deut.* 29. 29. *Rom.* 11. 33.
 Phil. 2. 10. 4 They that murmur against God, and blaspheme his Name, *Psal.* 74. 10. *Mark.* 3. 28, 29. *Lev.* 24. 21.
 Isay 45. 23. 5, *c* They that abuse God in his creatures, in bitter cursing and execrations, viz. that curse God, or a creature by God, *1 Reg.* 19. 2. & 21. 10. *Rev.* 13. 6 & 16. 21.
b Luke 17. 20. 6, *d* They that prophane any thing that is dedicated to the honor of his Name, as Churches, Church utensils, holy persons, customs, Sacraments, *1 Cor.* 11. 29.
 Rom. 9. 20, 21. 7, They that swear rashly, vainly, customarily, maliciously.
 11. 23, 24. 8, They that bind themselves with an oath to do mischief.
c *Lev.* 24. 15. 9, They who provoke others to take oaths for the compassing of some design.
 16. & 21. 12. 10, They that perform not their vows to God, which
 2 *King.* 10. 20. they
1 *Cor.* 10. 3.
Job. 2. 9.
d *Mat.* 21. 13.
Numb. 20. 3.
 6. 38.
Jer. 4. 1.
Mat. 5. 37.
John. 8. 44.

they have made of lawful, honest, and possible things.

11. Those who perform unlawful vows and oaths. Deut. 23. 21.
Mat. 14. 10.
12. Those who swear to things uncertain and unknown. Jer. 4. 2.
Isa. 48. 1.
13. Those who swear against their conscience, and perjure themselves. Zach. 5. 4.
14. In a word, here is condemned *Juramentum popinarum, platearum, officinarum, falsarium*; Tavern-oaths, Street-oaths, forg'd oaths. Mat. 5. 34, 35.
Jer. 12. 16.
15. They that use counterfeit and mocking oaths. 1 Pet. 3. 16.
16. They who make the Scriptures a nose of wax, and wrest them to maintain their own inventions. 1 Tim. 1. 3, &c.
Rev. 22. 19.

The fourth Commandment.

Remember thou keep holy the Sabbath-day, &c.

The Worship of God being settled in the former Commandments; necessary it was, that for the solemnization of it in publick, there should be an appointed time set out to it. And in this command the time is designed for this worship, viz. the seventh day from the Creation.

In strict terms it was given to the *Jews*: and it hath two parts, the *Precept*, and the reason of the *Precept*: The *Precept* again stands upon two legs, the Moral and Ceremonial.

1. The Moral part of it is, that a certain time be set out for the publick worship, which is perpetual and eternal.

2. The Ceremonial is, that it be precisely the seventh day here mentioned, which *S. Paul* saith, *Col. 2. 17. was a shadow of good things to come.*

Equity requires that men should set out one day in a week to spiritual and religious duties: now the Primitive Church, instead of the *Jewish Sabbath*, which was to be abolished after the death and resurrection of Christ, made choice of this day, in which he arose from the grave, on which he sent down the Holy Ghost, as a day of gladness and exaltation to them and all posterity, and honoured it with the name of the *Lords-day*: The observation thereof having continued all ages since the Apostles. Neither have Christians since judged it reasonable or convenient, to alter such an ancient and well-grounded custom, which

Fr. White Ep.

El. de Sab. pag.

268, &c.

Rev. 1. 10.

is commonly reputed to be an Apostolical tradition.

What was ceremonial then, in this command is done away, but what is moral yet remains, and is of perpetual observance; to wit, these two duties: Sanctification and Rest.

1. The first is Sanctification, for it must be kept holy.
2. The second is Rest, Thou, nor any that belongs to thee, shall do no work.

Both these are necessary, 1. Rest even from those works which have no vicious quality in themselves, but may be, if used, impediments to sacred and religious offices of the day. 2. And sanctification of the day by the exercises of religious duties: for to rest, and not to sanctifie, is to keep the Sabbath of an ox or an ass.

The ends why the Sabbath or Lords-day was ordained, are these.

1. For the exercise of all duties of piety, in publick especially.
2. For the practice of all duties of charity and pity.
3. To remember the great works of God, especially of the Creation, and Redemption of the world.

The Duties of the Sabbath.

1. To sanctifie the day set out to God, and to call it a *delight*, Isa. 58. 13. *The holy of the Lord, honourable.*

Psal. 118. 24.

2. Upon this day especially, to bless God, for Creation of the world, and the Son of God for our Redemption.

Rev. 1. 10.

Col. 3. 1.

3. To remember that upon this day Christ rose again for our justification, and that therefore we make it our day of resurrection from sin.

Ast. 16. 13.

Ast. 2. 46.

Ast. 13. 15.

1 Tim. 4. 13.

Ec.

Ast. 17. 11.

Ast. 20. 27.

Psal. 22. 23.

4. That we spend this day in holy offices and devotion.
 1. In hearing Divine Service in the Church.
 2. In publick Prayers, 1 Tim. 2. 1. 1 Cor. 14. 16.
 3. In hearing the Word of God read, or expounded.
 4. In reading good and pious Books.
 5. In Meditation and pious Conference.
 6. In receiving the Sacrament, Catechising.

7. In

7. In thanksgiving and praising the name of God. 1 Cor. 14. 16.
 5. To do all acts of charity ; such as are,
 1. To lose burdens, and remit offences and debts. Isa. 58. 6.
 2. To reconcile neighbours. Mat. 5. 23.
 3. To give alms, *Neb.* 8. 12. 1 Cor. 16. 1.
 4. To provoke one another to good works. Heb. 10. 24, 25.
 5. To exhort and edifie one another in love. 1 Cor. 14. 30.
 6. To visit the sick. 1 Theff. 5. 1.
 7. To give ease and rest to our servants, and cattel. Jam. 1. 27.
 6. To rest from our common affairs, and all servile works
 and labours, except of charity and necessity. Mat. 12. ad 13;
Mark 2. 27.
Luke 14. 1.
 7. That we rest and abstain from all desires, lusts, words,
 works, pleasures, which are our own, proceeding from our
 corrupt nature, and are not seasoned with grace : that so we
 may keep a spiritual Sabbath, *Isa.* 58. 13.
 8. That we remember this Sabbath, is but a type of that
 eternal rest and Sabbath we expect in Heaven, *There remains*
a rest, Sabbatismus, for the people of God, Heb. 4. 9.

They sin against this Commandment.

1. That put no difference betwixt this festival, and the *Lev.* 19. 30.
 common days of the week.
 2. They that set themselves, or compel, or entice others *Neh.* 13. 15.
 to needles worldly labours, and servile works on this day.
 3. They that refuse and neglect to come to the publick
 Assemblies of the Church, to hear and assist at divine offices. Heb. 10. 25.
Jude vers. 19.
 4. They that being Superiours, suffer those under their
 authority to be absent, and neglect holy duties.
 5. They that spend the day in idle and vain sports, for-
 bidden recreations, or actions of sin and folly. Eat, drink, 1 Cor. 10. 7.
 discourse, or sleep it away. Isa. 58. 13.
 6. They that travel unnecessary journies, *Mat.* 24. 20. Acts 1. 12.
Exod. 16. 29. Neh. 13. 15.
 7. They that buy and sell, keep Markets and Fairs, follow
 or assist Law-suits. 19.
 8. They who neglect charitable duties, 1 Cor. 16. 1. Jam. 2. 15, 16.
 9. They who *Judaize* either in their opinions of the Gal. 4. 10.
Col. 2. 16.

Sabbath, or their observation of it.

10. They who under a pretence of sermonizing, have cast off Gods solemn worship on this day : such as is, solemn reading of the Old and New Testament, Common-prayer, supplication, giving of thanks, singing of Psalms and Hymns, administrations of Sacraments, exercise of Church-censures, Collections for the poor, Ordination. All which were the offices and actions which were performed in the common Assemblies in the Primitive Church on this day, and therefore they never thought preaching the sole work of the Lords-day.

CATECHISM.

An Exposition of the Commandments, Of the Second TABLE.

Quest. **H**OW many Commandments be there of the second Table?

Answ. *There be six.*

Quest. What do you learn out of these Commandments?

Answ. *I learn my duty to man, or to my Neighbour.*

Quest. What is your duty to your Neighbour?

Answ. *This in the Catechism is set down: 1. First in two general Propositions. 2. And then by teaching the duties of every of these six precepts in particular, though delivered in large words as most comprehensive.*

The two general Propositions, are these:

1. *My duty to my neighbour is, that I should love him as my self. In that there is Charity.*
2. *To do to all men, as I would they should do unto me. In that there is Justice.*

These Commandments then are the foundation of all Justice and Mercy to men. And the intent is, that no man suffer self-love so far to interpose, that he be partial
in

Lev. 19. 18.

Mat. 22. 39.

Mat. 7. 12.

in judging what is his duty, either in the point of Charity or Justice towards another; but make himself the rule: and what Charity or Justice he desires other men to extend to him, the self same he extend to them. A rule, of that great perfection, that *Severus* the Emperour, yet a Heathen, is said, for it to have born a reverence to Christ and Christianity, and to have taken it up for his Motto, *Quod tibi fieri ne vis, alteri ne feceris*: In effect, Do as you would be done by.

It cannot be denied, but this is so reasonable a principle, that every man will assent to the equity of it so soon as spoken, and needs no proof; but then alone acknowledges it, and performs it as a duty of Religion, when he looks upon it as commanded by God, and, out of the reverence he bears to the supreme Law-giver, conceives, that out of conscience he is bound to it.

Upon which, that there might be a stronger obligation for Justice, and the greater affection to Charity, it pleased God to subjoyn this second Table to the first, *Ut rivus justitiæ ducatur à fonte pietatis*, that the streams of Justice and Charity to man, should be derived whence they sprang, that is from the spring and fountain of Piety.

And these two are as inseparable as the spring and the rivulet: so that the truth of Religion is inconsistent with the neglect or omission of the duties of Justice and Charity towards men. This is the Character that *S. James* sets, by which a true sincere, honest, religious man may be known to us; *To visit the fatherless, and widows in affliction*, *Jam. i. 27.* To abhor Idols, to keep the Sabbath, to hear Sermons, to make many and long prayers, not to swear, are not the notes to know him by, but his acts of Justice and Charity. And *S. John*, 1 *Joh. 4. 20, 21.* in plain terms tells that man, who loves not his brother, that *he is a liar*, adding this reason; This Commandment we have from God, that *he that loves God, must love his brother also.*

I willingly confess that this argument, drawn from the external works of Justice and Charity, is strong to prove the

Nega-

Tit. I. 12.

Negative, not the Affirmative. For there may be Acts of justice and charity, where there is not true Religion : as in the *Heathens* and all moral men: But it is certain, that in whomsoever there is true Religion, there will be these : so that that man will be a just and a charitable man. And this I conceive to be the reason, that in the Prophets, Apostles and Evangelists, the tryal of a mans Religion is commonly put upon these. He may pretend the keeping the commands of the first Table, and be very severe in them, which whether he do truly or hypocritically is known only to God, for mans eye can never pierce to, and search the heart. But whether he be just and charitable or no, man may know by his actions, in which if he find him failing notoriously, wilfully, maliciously, he may certainly conclude, that his Religion is vain.

1. *Thou shalt love. Diliges.*

Three words there are used for love { *Amar.*
Benevolentia.
Dilectio.

1. *Amor*, may have for its object all creatures : for being the works of Gods hands, they are good, and therefore *Amanda* to be loved.

2. *Benevolentia*, is a good will born to reasonable creatures only, which may be rash and erroneous : for a man may bear good will to a person, and for a cause that he ought not, *Gen. 47. 4.*

3. *Dilectio*, ariseth from election and consideration, and under this word we are enjoyned our duty. We are not bound barely *amare*, to love sensually and passionately, or *bene velle*, to wish well partially and intemperately, but *diligere*, to love discreetly, and upon good reason to make our choice.

Verus amator, debet esse verus estimator. He ought to weigh things right, that will love aright ; for hasty love is commonly light and foolish. The Spouse in the *Canticles*, prays in this form ; *Ordinate in me charitatem.* It is her Petition,

Petition, that her charity be well ordered, and well ordered it will never be, till it become *dilectio*, that we know what to chuse, and what to hate, and why to chuse, and why to hate.

Now the method and order of love in brief is this :

Exod. 28. 15,
36.

1. That we love *God* first and most. The high Priest carried the name of *God* on his head, but the names of the *Israelites* on his breast-plate and shoulders. That great and fearful Name must be in the highest place : the love supereminent we bear to it ; and then for Gods sake it must descend to our neighbour, as the breast-plate and shoulders. *Ex Deo nascitur amoris*, Loves birth is from God.

2. Thy Neighbour.

2. The next step is, that we love our Neighbour, *i. e.* every man, be it a friend, or be it an enemy. If a brother, there is in him *proximitas originis*, a nearness of blood : if an enemy, *proximitas nature* or *societatis*, a nearness either in nature in general, or some bond of civil society.

Now in this love of our Neighbour, heed would be taken of two things :

1. That our love be not erroneous, that we take not our neighbours sin for our neighbour, and love their sins because we love their persons, *Stultus, & improbus hic amor est, dignusque notari*, and God prohibits it. *Thou shalt rebuke thy neighbour, and not suffer sin upon him.*

2. That we look to the degrees of proximity, and accordingly extend our love, for our neighbour is to have the priority of our love before another, as they stand further off, or are nearer unto us. And the order is this :

1. The nearest conjunction among Christians is that of the Spirit of Grace, of Religion, and these are to have the first place in our love. *Do good to all men, but especially to those who are of the household of faith*, Gal. 6. 10.

2. Among these (if there be no disparity) then those first, who are nearest unto us, either in friendship, blood, or some other way.

3. After, as they stand nearer or farther off in Relation.

1. The

1. The husband or wife. Parents.
2. The children, and those of the family.
3. Our kindred.
4. Our friends or acquaintance, near neighbours.
5. Our country-men.
6. Societies of men before any particular. But this is not perpetual, and may be broken by many accidents, and intervenient occasions.

3. *As thy self.*

Our own selves are set for the rule to love our neighbour: *No man hates his own flesh, but loves and cherishes it*, and so he must deal by his neighbour. But it is to be observed, that the adverb *sicut*, as, is not a note of parity, but similitude, and shews not the quantity, but the quality of our love. For no man is bound to love another equally, or so much as himself, but with that truth of love, that he loves himself. The love then of man to man ought to be true and not false, real, and not feigned nor adulterate. A man would be loth that other men should dissemble with him, neither may he then dissemble with them. *Let love be without dissimulation.*

Rom. 12. 9.

It should have these conditions :

- | | | | |
|------------------|---------------------|-----------------|----------------------|
| 1. Justice. | 2. Order. | 3. Truth. | Be <i>Dilectio</i> . |
| 1. <i>Iusta.</i> | 2. <i>Ordinata.</i> | 3. <i>Vera.</i> | |

These are the general heads, whence all duty to man doth arise : which because they are derived into many streams, for our direction in them, it hath pleased God to set down six precepts, of which the Catechism in the following words gives us a summary account : which for the ease of the learner, I thought good to digest into these short Questions and Answers.

Quest. Which is the fifth Commandment ?

Ans. Honour thy father and mother, that thy days may be long in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

Quest. What do you learn out of this Commandment ?

1. To love, honour, and succour my father and mother.
2. To honour and obey the King, and his Ministers.

3. *To submit my self to all Governors, Teachers, spiritual Pastors and Ministers.*

4. *To order my self reverently and lowly to all my betters.*

Quest. What is the sum of the four next Commandments?

Answ. *To hurt no body by word or deed.*

Quest. Which is the sixth Commandment?

Answ. *Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt do no murder.*

Quest. What dost thou learn out of this Commandment?

Answ. *To hurt no man. To bear no malice or hatred in my heart.*

Quest. Which is the seventh Commandment?

Answ. *Thou shalt not commit adultery.*

Quest. What dost thou learn out of this Commandment?

Answ. *To keep my body in Temperance, Soberness, Chastity.*

Quest. Which is the eighth Commandment?

Answ. *Thou shalt not steal.*

Quest. What dost thou learn out of this Commandment?

Answ. 1. *To be true and just in all my dealings.*

2. *To keep my hands from picking and stealing.*

Quest. Which is the ninth Commandment?

Answ. *Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.*

Quest. What dost thou learn out of this Commandment?

Answ. *To keep my tongue from evil speaking, lying, and slandering.*

Quest. Which is the tenth and last Commandment?

Answ. *Thou shalt not covet thy neighbours house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbours wife, nor his servant, nor his maid, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is his.*

Quest. What dost thou learn out of this Commandment?

Answ. *Not to covet or desire other mens goods, but to labour truly*

truly to get my living, and to do my duty in that state of life, unto which it shall please God to call me.

Hitherto I have followed word for word the Catechism, only I have brought into Questions and Answers, what is in one continued tenour of words delivered, and I have applied the Answer, as it belongs to every Commandment, that the sum of every one may be more easily perceived and remembred, which as they stood, was not so easily discerned.

And here I must take leave to admire the wisdom of the Church, that in her explication was so brief and full, making choice of such large words that might extend and comprehend what any Expolitor could say upon any Command. But childrens memories were not to be overcharged with more at first.

He that of these desires to take a fuller view, may if he please, peruse that which now follows.

The fifth Commandment.

Honour thy father and mother, that thy days may be long in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

The intent of God in giving this Command is, that all Politick and Civil Societies among men be preserved and settled in peace, unity, and good order, which without mutual duties of Superiours to Inferiours, and of Inferiours to Superiours, will never be done. In this Command the duties of both are pointed at. In it consider,

1. The Title given the Superiour; a *Father*, and *Mother*.
2. The debt due unto them, *Honour*.
3. A promise annexed to them that do the duty: *ut sis longævus.*

1. By *Father* and *Mother* understand all that are above us,

us, in what relation soever, *Natural, Civil, Ecclesiastical*, as it is well expounded in the Catechism. And the reason why God made choice of this word *Father*, under which to express all superiours, was, because *Father* and *Mother* being names of nature, and originally names of power and authority, teach us, that,

1. Regality, superiority, and authority, is no inhumane invention proceeding out of ambition, or conquest, or faction, but from nature it self. *Sub & supra*, are as old as *Eatherhood*. Rom. 13. 1;
1 Pet. 2. 13.
2. That Monarchy must then be as ancient also; for the *Father* during his life ruled the family, as appears in *Genesis*. Gen. 4. 7.
3. And consequently *Honour*, which is the Duty to a Superiour, is as natural and ancient; and must be done cheerfully, in simplicity and singleness of heart. Ephes. 6. 5.
Col. 3. 22.
1 Pet. 2. 9.

1. *And first the Duties of Inferiours to Superiours, are these, in regard of their*

1. *a* Paternity; *срѣдн*, natural affection and love. a 1 Tim. 3. 3.
2. *b* Excellency; and high estimation and honour, b 1 Tim. 6. 1.
1 Pet. 2. 17.
3. *c* Superiority; Reverence, Veneration, courteous Behaviour. c Rom. 13. 7.
4. *d* Office; Obedience, subjection, service, patient sufferance. d 1 Pet. 3. 6.
Levit. 19. 32.
5. *e* Authority and power; Fear, meekness, gentleness, e Rom. 13. 1.
Gal. 5. 22.
1 Pet. 2. 19.
6. *f* Care, pains, vigilancy; Tribute, custom, maintenance. f Rom. 13. 4.
7. And, *that we may under them lead a quiet and peace-able life, in all godliness and honesty; prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks,* 1 Tim. 2. 1, 2.

2. *The Duties of Superiours to Inferiours.*

Secondly, *Father*, and *Mother*, are words of Relation, and they must have a *Correlatum*, which in strict-

ness of speech is a Son ; but in this Command is any Inferiour : here then

1. The Father	}	Relates	{	to the Son.
2. The King				to his People or Subjects.
3. The Husband				to the Wife.
4. The Master				to the Servant.
5. The Pastour				to the Flock or People.
6. The Magistrate				to those under his Government :
7. The Aged				to the younger
8. The Rich				to the poor
9. The Learned				to the ignorant
				<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">superi-</div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">our in</div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">{</div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">Age.</div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">Estate.</div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">Gifts.</div> </div> </div>

And then these reciprocal names will put the Superiour in mind of reciprocal duties in all these Relations.

1. *The Fathers duty to the Son is,*

1. Nourishment, maintenance, provision, 2 Cor. 12. 14. 2 Chron. 21. 3.
2. Education, instruction, Eph. 6. 4. Prov. 20. 11.
3. Correction, Heb. 12. 9. Not to provoke to anger, Ephes. 6. 4.
4. Blessing, Gen. 27. 25.

2. *The Kings duty to his Subjects ; and Magistrates, to those under them.*

1. *a* To be the keepers of both Tables ; to see that Truth be maintained, Justice executed.
2. *b* To see that God be honoured, abuses in Religion reformed.
3. *c* To be a *nursing Father* to the Church.
4. *d* To punish the bad, encourage & reward the good.
5. *e* To seek peace and ensue it.
6. *f* Upon a just ground to wage war.

3. *The Husbands duty to his Wife.*

1. To dwell with her according to knowledge, 1 Pet. 3. 7.
2. *a* To love her ; which is declared by mutual help, and by due benevolence.
3. To govern, direct, maintain her, and protect her.

4. *The Masters duty to the Servant.*

1. To

a Rom. 13. 4.

b Dent. 17. 19.

P s. 132. 3, 4, 5.

2 Reg. 23. 4.

c Isa. 49. 23.

d Rom. 13. 4.

e 1 Tim. 2. 2.

f Gen. 14. 14.

a Eph. 5. 25.

Gen. 2. 18.

1 Cor. 7. 3.

b Gen. 3. 17.

1. *a* To command lawful, possible things, *Col.* 4. 1. *a* *Exod.* 5. 7.
2. *b* To teach them, feed them, correct them, pay them their wages. *b* *Gen.* 18. 19.
3. *c* Not to be proud, stern, rough, churlish to them, *Col.* *c* *Deut.* 15. 15.
5. 1. *Eph.* 5. 3. *Jam.* 5. 4.
5. *a* *The Pastors duty to his flock, is,* To minister the Gospel of God. *a* *Acts* 20. 20, 28.
1. *Ὁρίζομαι.* To divide the word aright. *b* 2 *Tim.* 2. 15.
2. *Λειτουργῶν,* *Rom.* 15. 16. *1 Tim.* 4. 12.
3. To go before them in word and example. *13.*
6. *d* *Those that have gifts and goods, must use them to the advantage of others.* *c* 1 *Tim.* 4. 12.
7. *e* *The aged must shew wisdom, sobriety, gravity in their words and actions.* *d* *Rom.* 12. 6.
- c* *Tit.* 4. 10. 11.
- c* *Tit.* 2. 2. 3.

2. *Sins against this Commandment.*

1. *a* Those offend, who despise their Parents age, infirmity; and are ashamed of their poverty and birth. *a* *Lev.* 19. 23.
2. *b* They that publish their errors, vices, infirmities, to shame them. *b* *Gen.* 9. 22.
3. Children that marry without their parents consent, when it may be had. *2 Sam.* 15. 3.
4. *d* Children that refuse and reject their parents commands. *4, 5, 6.*
5. *e* They that murmur, mutiny, rebel, and dishonour the King, either by denying, or not yielding honour and reverence to his person and dignity: Obedience to his Laws: or due maintenance to his state; as Tribute, Custom, Subsidies, when necessary. *c* *Numb.* 30.
6. *f* They who are undutiful to their Husbands, Masters, Governors, Tutors; that murmur and repine against their commands, in such matters as are within their power and authority. *3, 4.*
7. *g* They that neither reverence the persons, nor obey the precepts, nor care for the authority of their Pastors, and deny them maintenance. *d* *Deut.* 21. 18.
8. *b* They that are uncivil and rude toward aged persons, or towards their betters in gifts, or estate, or that mock and scorn them. *e* *Numb.* 16. 12.
9. They *f* *Eph.* 5. 22.
- g* *Col.* 3. 22.
- h* 2 *Tim.* 3. 1, 2.
- i* *Exod.* 16. 2.
- j* *Mar.* 10. 7. 14.
- k* *Heb.* 13. 7. 17.
- l* 1 *Tim.* 5. 17.
- m* *Gal.* 6. 6.
- n* 2 *Reg.* 2.
- o* *Jude* vers. 8.

- i 2 Tim. 3. 3. 9. i They that are unthankful to their superiours.
 k 2 Tim. 2. 1, 2. 10. k They that make not intercession for them.
 l Act. 23. 5. 11. l They that curse the King in their heart, or speak
 Exod. 22. 23. evil of the Ruler of their people.
 Eccl. 10. 20. 12. They that neglect to give their people, their wives,
 Rom. 13. 7, 8. their children, their family, their servants, or any of their in-
 ferious, that Due, which respectively belongs to them.

Exod. 20. 12. 3. *That thy days may be long upon the land, which the Lord thy God giveth thee.*

Deut. 5. 16. *That thy days may be prolonged, and that it may go well with thee in the land which, &c.*

That] here, intimates not the final cause, but the event ; for this is not the end of our obedience, but an event and a consequent to follow upon it ; And the promise is used as a motive to give honour to whom honour is due.

To clear the truth of it, we must observe,

1. That all the promises of God for temporal blessings are conditional, and shall be so far performed, as may make for our good ; and therefore in Deut. 5. the promise is thus declared and limited : *Honour thy father and mother, that thy days may be prolonged, and that it may go well with thee* : So that the meaning is, that so long as it may go well with any good man, his life shall be prolonged, and no farther. But if his life prove to him a displeasure, and no benefit, it shall be taken away ; and an eternal, which is far better, bestowed on him. Thus it happened to *Josiah*, to *Enoch*. *The good man is taken away from the evil to come,* Isa. 57. 1.

2 Reg. 22. 20.

Heb. 11. 5.

Ecclus. 44. 16.

2. Or, *that it may go well with thee*, may carry this sense, which *S. Paul* intimates, 1 Tim. 2. 2. Honour Kings, that you may lead a peaceable and quiet life : for where this order is broken, and Superiours dishonoured, there ariseth nothing but confusion ; peace and quietness is disturbed, and then it goes well with no man, a long life is a discomfort, and no felicity. These if you mean to enjoy, you must honour ; for, upon dishonouring, they vanish.

3. Or else, this promise might shew Gods Ordinance. For God gives a healthy and long life as a reward and blessing to crown our obedience even before the sons of men, *Psal. 37. 22. Such as shall be blessed of him shall inherit the earth; but they that be cursed of him, shall be cut off*; Jer. 17. 11. Job. 21. 17, 18, 19, 20.

In this particular, the disobedient son was to be cut off by the hand of the Magistrate, and was to be stoned; And Solomon tells us, *The Ravens of the valley shall pick out his eyes*. *Dent. 21. 18. Prov. 30. 17.* Gods Law then was, that he should not be *longævus* long-lived. And sometimes God executes this vengeance with his own hand, as upon *Corah* and his rebellious confederates, *Num. 16. Ob fool, this night shall thy soul be taken from thee*. Read the story of the Kings, and you shall find, that Rebels and Traitors were not long-liv'd, but perished by the sword and immature deaths.

The sixth Commandment.

Thou shalt not kill, or murder.

God having in the former Command secured the Superior, in those that follow secures all men in general, whether Superiours, Inferiours, or Equals; and first he begins with the Person, and secures his life. Life we would have above all things, nay life we must have or enjoy nothing: nor wife, nor good name, can do any good to a murdered man: hence it is, that God secures that to us, which is absolutely necessary, peremptorily commanding that no man assault our person, and attempt to take away our life from us. But, because the Negative includes the Affirmative, we must do all those duties of justice and charity, by which the life of man may be preserved.

Inhumanity and cruelty are the fountains which let forth the streams of blood. Brotherly kindness and compassion teach us to preserve the life of man; whatsoever then may be derived from either of these, are the duties of this Commandment, *Ut homo homini non sit lupus*, that a man
be

be not a wolf to a man : *Ut homo homini sit Deus*, that a man be as a God to his brother.

1. *Forbidden here then there is*

Deut. 14. 21. 1. Cruelty and inhumanity. This forbidden. *Thou shalt not take the dam with the young*, Deut. 22. 6. *Not seeke a lamb in his mothers milk*: and Prov. 12. 10. *A righteous man regards the life of his beast, but the bowels of the wicked are cruel. Would there were a sword in my hand, that I might slay thee*, saith Balaam to his Ass. If cruelty were not to be used to a beast, much less to a man. God never intended that man, made after his Image, should be *πῦλῶ ἀματὶ κτενέει*, a piece of clay kneaded with blood.

2. All kinds of homicide: as our Saviour hath interpreted this command, *Mat. 5.* whether of the heart, tongue or hand.

Mat. 15. 19. 1. *From the heart proceeds murders*; of this kind are

a Rom. 1. 31. 1. a Unmercifulness, and a desire to oppress the poor, *Amos 2. 6, 7.*

b Mark 5. 22. 2. b Anger immoderate or causeless, too lightly begun, Ephes. 4. 26. or too long continued.

c Gal. 5. 20. 3. c Envy, grudging, repining, rancour, disdain, emulation.

d Rom. 1. 29. 4. d Hatred, malice, uncharitable suspicion, 1 Cor. 13. 5, 7.

5. Desire of revenge, irreconciliation, frowardness, contention.

e Act. 23. 12. 6. e Counsel, plotting or consent to murder any man.

Luke 22. 2. 2. The breaking out of this murder of the heart in 1. The tongue, manifested

a Ephes. 4. 31. 1. a By evil speaking.

Col. 3. 12, 13. 2. Disdainful speaking. *Racha.*

19.

3. a By bitter and angry words. *Thou fool.* Mat. 5. 22.

4. Mocking in an ill manner, *Lev. 19. 14. Gen. 21. 9.*

5. Brawling, threatening, provoking, *Tit. 3. 2.*

6. Clamour or vociferation, *Eph. 3. 1.*

b Act. 24. 5.

Act. 28. 4.

7. b Detraction, censoriousness.

2. The

2. The hand, which is actual murder, and this may not be acted;

1. Not upon a mans self. For no man is master of his own life, he is Gods servant, and the Lord that gave it, must take it away. *Lord now lettest thou thy servant depart*, Luke 2. 29. sung old *Simeon*.

2. Another he may not kill, *Gen. 4. 10, 11. Gen. 9. 5.* Neither commit *homicidium, fratricidium, parricidium, &c.* not kill a man, his brother, his father.

Quest. Whether then may the Magistrate put any man to death? *Exod. 23. 7. 2 Reg. 6. 32.*

Ans. Yes, But he may not murder any man: lawfully he may, and must take away some mans life; for God hath put the sword into his hand, and made him a minister to execute wrath, *Rom. 13. 14.* *Thou*, then, in the Command, is the private man, who hath no commission from God; not the Superiour, whom God (who alone hath *vita & necis potestatem*, power of life and death) hath set in his place, and in his right and power to execute malefactors. So that, to speak properly, it is not the Magistrate that takes away the malefactors life, but God that commands his Vice-gerent and Deputy to do it.

*Gen. 9. 6.
Deut. 19. 13.*

Now, that the Magistrate proceed justly, and fall not within the compass of murder; necessary it is, 1. That there be a just cause. 2. A right end and intent. 3. That he be Gods Deputy; that is, have a just and a lawful power; for where any of these three, especially the last, is wanting, the man is plainly (who is adjudged and executed) murdered; and the doers are murderers, be they in what height, place, or power soever. *2 Chron. 24. 22.*

Now to this murder of the hand are reduced,

1. Chance-medly, *Deut. 19. 4, 5.*
2. Man-slaughter, *Exod. 21. 12, 13. Levit. 24. 17.*
3. *a* Mutilation, or dangerous wounds, fighting.
4. *b* All Duells.
5. All unlawful War. Treasons, *2 Tim. 3. 4.*
6. *c* Those medicines that procure Abortions.
7. *d* Cowardise in a Magistrate, that delivers an inno-

a Lev. 24. 19, 20.

b Jam. 4. 1.

Gen. 10. 9.

Gen. 38. 8.

c Exod. 21. 22,

23.

d Deut. 1. 17.

Luke 23. 24. cent persons to the will of his enemy. This was *Pilats* case.

In this Precept is commanded,

1. *a* To love one another, and to do all offices of charity, by which the life of man may be preserved. *Job* 29. 15; 16.
 2. *b* To preserve our own health, and of others, so far as we can. *2 Cor.* 8. 3.
 3. *c* To preserve and follow peace with all men. To be quiet, *1 Thes.* 4. 11.
 4. *d* To be merciful, bountiful to prisoners, captives, &c. *Col.* 3. 12. *Mat.* 25. 36.
 5. *e* To be courteous, kind, affable, *Eph.* 4. 32.
 6. *f* To bear one anothers burdens, *Gal.* 6. 2.
 7. *g* To forgive and remit offences, and to be easily pacified and reconciled. *1 Pet.* 1. 23. *1 Tim.* 5. 23. *c Rom.* 12. 18. *Col.* 3. 12. *e 1 Pet.* 3. 8. *Col.* 3. 12. *f Rom.* 15. 1. *g 2 Cor.* 2. 10. *Eph.* 4. 32.

I need not delineate farther who they are that break, who keep this Commandment; since by the inspection of the particulars it is easie for any man to do it.

The seventh Commandment.

Thou shalt not commit adultery.

Θύμος, Anger and the ill effects thereof, are restrained in the former Commandment, in this, *παιθυμία κακὴ*, evil lust and concupiscence. *Col.* 3. 5. *2 Thes.* 4. 5.

The end intended in this Commandment is Chastity, that we keep our bodies chaste, as the Temples of the Holy Ghost: whatsoever therefore may conduce to this end must be done, what may stain our chastity must be avoided.

What is here Commanded?

1. *a* Chastity. 2. Sobriety. 3. Temperance, or moderation in meats and drinks, purity. *1 Thes.* 4. 3. *Luke* 21. 34. *1 Tim.* 3. 3.
 4. *b* Modesty in apparel, in behaviour, in words, *Mat.* 1. 25. *1 Tim.* 2. 9.
 5. *c* Castigation of the body, *1 Cor.* 5. 27. *Rom.* 13. 14. 6. Prayer, *c 2 Cor.* 6. 4. 5.

6. *d* Prayer, watching, fasting.
7. *e* Marriage to those who have not the gift of continency.
8. *f* The bed undefiled : or the chaste use of a wife.
9. *g* Not to separate, divorce, or put away a wife.
10. Labour in an honest vocation, 2 *Thef.* 3. 6, *ad* 13.
11. *h* To make a covenant with the eyes and ears.
12. *i* To keep honest, modest, and chaste company.

d 1 Cor. 7. 5.
e 1 Pet. 4.
e 1 Cor. 7. 9.
f Mat. 19. 11.
f Heb. 13. 4.
g Mat. 19. 3.
h Ezra 10. 19.
h Job 31. 1, 7.
i Mat. 5. 29.
i Prov. 7. 22.
i Psal. 50. 18.

In this Commandment are forbidden,

1. All kind of sensuality, lasciviousness, wantonness, or uncleanness, which is contained under these four words, *Rom.* 1. 24.
 1. *πορνεία*, which in a married person is whoredom or adultery : and under it may be reduced ;
 1. Incest, which is committed with one allied in the degrees prohibited.
 2. Concubinage, which Northward they call a Ligbie.
 3. Polygamy, or the taking and keeping of two or more wives.
 2. *πορνεία*, Villany : under which are contained,
 1. Bestiality, *Levit.* 18. 23.
 2. Sodomy, *Levit.* 18. 22. *Rom.* 1. 26. *Gen.* 19.
 3. *πλεονεξία*, An immoderate desire : and under this are,
 1. *a* Harlotry, when committed with a common strumpet.
 2. *b* Fornication, when with a maid not common.
 3. Immoderate use of the marriage-bed, *Heb.* 13. 4.
 4. *κακία*, Naughtiness, lasciviousness, wantonness ; to which may be reduced this fifth following :
 1. All that feeds this sin, or are incentives to it ; as
 1. *a* Luxurious diet, inflaming wines, &c. *Isa.* 5. 11.
 2. *b* An idle life.
 3. Morose thoughts, that dwell on the phancy with delight, *Mat.* 15. 19.
 2. *c* All outward provocations to it, which are the snares of lust : as lascivious dressings.

Deut. 22. 22.
Prov. 6. 32.
Heb. 13. 4.
Levit. 18. 6.
1 Cor. 5. 1.
Gen. 2. 24.
Mat. 19. 5.
Mal. 2. 14, 15.
 16,
Deut. 23. 17.
Jer. 5. 7.
b Eph. 5. 3.
Ezek. 18. 6.
Eph. 4. 19.
Gal. 5. 19.
Gal. 5. 9.
a 1 Pet. 4. 3.
Rom. 13. 13.
1 Cor. 5. 11.
b Ezek. 16. 49.
Rom. 13. 14.
Job 20. 11, 12,
 13.
c *Isa.* 3. 16.
ad 23.

d 1 Tim. 2. 9.

e Prov. 7. 9. *ad*

27.

Mark 6. 22.

f 1 Cor. 5. 11.

1 Cor. 15. 33.

g Prov. 6. 27.

h 3. 16.

b 2 Pet. 2. 14.

Gen. 38. 7.

i Ephel. 4. 29.

Col. 3. 8.

k Jam. 1. 13,
14.

1. *d* Embroidered hair.

2. Painting the face, 2 Reg. 9. 30.

3. *e* Strange apparel.

4. Wanton gestures, dalliances.

5. *f* Corrupt company.

6. Lascivious books.

7. *g* Wanton pictures, tales, stories, songs.

8. Immodest kisses, &c.

3. The signs of it.

1. *b* In the eye wanton glances. Eyes full of adultery.

2. *i* In the speech, *σαπρη λόγοι*, smutty words.

4. *k* In a word, all desires of wantonness consented to, though they break not into act.

Those who keep their bodies chaste, or use the means to chastity, are those who keep;

Those who pollute, or give way to any temptation that may pollute, are the men that break this Commandment.

The eighth Commandment.

Thou shalt not steal.

Man may have a just title to somewhat, which he may call his own, whether his Title ariseth, by just acquisition, inheritance, by gift or donation, or by contract. And it is the purpose of God here to secure *Suum cuique*, every man in his estate, setting a hedge, and a fence about his goods by an eternal Law of commutative Justice, that no man dare to break over, or rush upon, what is his, without an apparent injury, and an affront done to God.

This being the end:

1. *Here is commanded.*

a 1 Tim. 6. 7, 8.

b Phil. 2. 4.

1 Reg. 21. 6.

c Rom. 9. 8.

1 Thes. 4. 6.

Deut. 25. 13.

1. *a* That every man be content with his estate: and to have moderate desires.

2. *b* To preserve our neighbours goods, and to suffer every man to enjoy his own quietly, and fairly.

3. *c* To give and pay every man his due: and injure no man.

4. To

4. *d* To use justice in all our dealings, contracts, bargains. *d* Jo. 6. 12. Prov. 27. 23. Phil. 4. 12.

5. To be frugal, and not to spend above our estates, *Luke* 15. 13.

6. *e* To use honest means to get a livelihood, viz. prayer and labour. *e* Mat. 6. 11. 1 Tim. 5. 8, 16.

7. *f* To use our goods to benefit others justly, liberally, cheerfully, *Heb.* 13. 16. *f* Luke 6. 35.

8. *g* That we restore what is unjustly gotten, or detained, *g* Exod. 12. 6, Luke 19. 8. *g*

2. Here is forbidden,

1. *a* Unjustice, violence, oppression.

2. *b* Covetousness, and hoarding up all that comes in, *a* Rom. 1. 29. *b* 1 Thes. 4. 6. Ephes. 5. 5.

3. *c* Tenacity, or the niggards hand. *c* Eccl. 4. 8.

4. *d* Contentiousness, and vexatious Law-suits. *d* 1 Cor. 6. 1.

5. *e* Immoderate care and sollicitude. *e* Mar. 6. 25.

6. *f* Deceit, fraud, circumvention in bargaining, contracts, buying, selling. *f* 1 Thes. 4. 6.

7. *g* Picking and stealing: or secret purloynings, *1 Pet.* 2. *g* Ephes. 4. 28. *g*

8. *b* Open robbery, violence, plundering, and rapacity. *b* 1 Cor. 6. 10. *i* Deut. 25. 13. Amos 8. 4.

9. *i* False weights, and measures. *k* Rom. 2. 27. Acts 5. 3.

10. *k* Sacrilege: To detain Tythes, Tribute, Custom, *l* Psal. 37. 21. *l*

11. *l* To borrow and not to pay again, when they are able. *m* Jam. 5. 4. Jer. 7. 6.

12. *m* To detain hirelings wages: cheat orphans, and widows. *n* Lev. 6. 2, 3. *o* Isa. 11. 23.

13. *n* To embezel other mens estates, and fail a trust. *p* Psal. 15. 4.

14. *o* To receive bribes, and set justice to sale. *1 Pet.* 2. 1. *1*

15. *p* To break their promise, and refuse to stand to their bargain. *q* Luke 15. 13. Levit. 6. 4. 5. Exod. 22. 16. *7.*

16. To embase and adulterate Coin, and pass it for good and perfect.

17. *q* Prodigality to waste their own estate.

18. They, who make not restitution, offend.

19. *r* To

12 Thes. 3. 11. 19. *r* To live an idle life, and not to use honest labour to live.

The ninth Commandment.

Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.

The scope and intent of the Law-giver is, that as God is a God of truth, so those who honour him, labour to preserve truth among men, and hate the contrary, which is all falshood and lying; since by a false testimony the credit, reputation, and good name of our neighbour, that I say nothing of his goods and life, are much impaired and wronged.

This sometimes is called in question in judgment, sometimes again it may be hazarded in private commerces among men: and therefore God here gives an order for the tongue, that whentoever, or wherefoever there be an occasion to speak of him, we cast off lying, and speak every man the truth of, and to his Neighbour. Our words then must be,

a Ephes. 4. 25
Psal. 15. 2.
b Rom. 1. 30.
Levit. 19. 16.
1 Tim. 5. 13.
Acts 23. 7.
Jo. 18. 36.
c *Acts* 5. 42.
Luc. 22. 57.
d *Rom.* 12. 9.
1 Pet. 2. 1.
2 Cor. 12. 20.
Acts 12. 22.
1 Thes. 2. 5.
e *Ephes.* 4. 29.
2 Sam. 16. 3.
f *Prov.* 17. 27,
 28.
Jam. 3. 6.
Eccles. 10. 12,
 13, 14.
g *Gal.* 2. 4. *ad*
 14.
Ruth 2. 4.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>a</i> True: to which is opposed | <i>b</i> { Lying, and Slander, Calumny, Detraction, Vanity, Tale-bearing. |
| 2. <i>c</i> Free: to which is opposed | { Indiscreet professing of truth, and cowardly fear. |
| 3. <i>d</i> Simple: to which is opposed | { Guile and whispering, Dissimulation, Flattery. |
| 4. <i>e</i> Profitable: to which is opposed | { Unprofitable, Hurtful, rotten } speech. |
| 5. <i>f</i> Few: to which is opposed | { Immoderate prating, Futility, unseasonable suppressing the Truth. |
| 6. <i>g</i> Courteous: to which is opposed | { Scurrility, Rail-ing, Scolding. |
| | 7. Affable: |

7. *b* Affable : to which is opposed { Morosity, churlish words. *b* Ephes. 3. 4.
 1. The Virtues here commanded, are, Truth, Freedom, *1* Sam. 25.
 Simplicity, &c. *2* Sam. 16. 5.
 2. The opposite Vices forbidden, viz. Lying, Slandering, *Gen.* 21. 9.
 &c.

1. *They then keep this Commandment,*

1. *a* That preserve the good name of their neighbour. *a* Prov. 10. 12.
 2. *b* That truly, and freely, and simply give a testimony to Truth, especially being called to it by lawful Authority. *b* Matth. 1. 19.
 3. *c* That use few, courteous, profitable, and affable words. *a* Acts 4. 20.
 4. *d* That speak well and charitably of their neighbours. *a* Acts 29. 30.
c Jam. 1. 19.
1 Pet. 3. 8.
Eph 4. 29.
1 Cor. 13. 5.
 7.

2. *They offend against this Commandment,*

1. *a* They that bring in, and they that are false witnesses against any man. *a* Mat. 26. 60.
 2. *b* They that accuse their neighbour unjustly, and raise false tales, and they who report and scatter them. *b* 1 Reg. 21. 1.
 3. *c* They that openly slander, detract, scoff, or rail at their brother, or uncharitably censure him, and backbite him. *Levit.* 19. 19.
 4. *d* They who are suspicious, raise jealousies, and are busy-bodies in other mens matters. *Tit.* 2. 3.
 5. *e* They who flatter and dissemble with a double tongue. *c* Luc 11. 15.
 6. They who are whisperers, *Rom.* 1. 29. *a* Acts 2. 13.
 7. *f* They who use churlish words, and are vain boasters, *Matth.* 7. 1.
 8. They who give malicious false Testimonies in public or private, *Exod.* 23. 1. *Rom.* 2. 1.
 9. *b* They who conceal the Truth to the prejudice of another, being required by justice and charity to give Testimony to it. *d* 2 Sam. 16. 3.
 10. *i* Judges that give false Sentences. *1* Pet. 4. 15.
e Prov. 26. 18.
5. ad 26.

- k Exod. 23. 2. 11. k Advocates and Lawyers that wittingly plead bad
 Alsa. 10. 1. causes, 2 Chron. 19. 2.
 Jer. 32. 13, 14. 12. l Registers or Notaries that make false Acts.
 m 1 Tim. 4. 2. 13. m All that equivocate or lye, Exod. 23. 7. Col. 3. 9.

The tenth Commandment.

Thou shalt not covet thy neighbours house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbours wife, nor his man-servant, nor his maid-servant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is his.

This Commandment cuts to the quick; and the Scope of it is to extirpate the very root, and destroy the seed of all injustice and uncharitableness from the earth.

It shews that God looks farther than man, and that his Law is more perfect and exact, than all the Laws of men: For, whereas the Laws of men can only restrain the outward
 a Rom. 13. 4. a Act, bind the hands, and stop the mouth: and, in case
 Heb. 10. 16. they prove unruly, punish the Malefactor: Gods Law takes hold on the first and inmost thoughts, intentions, and b motions to evil; and, in case they be entertained, will call man to the bar for them.

b Rom. 7. 14.
 Mark 12. 30.
 Jo. 4. 23.

I little doubt, but what is here forbidden was also prohibited in the former Commandments; for in them all intentions to evil are restrained. But yet with this difference; In them it was by reduction and implication, in this it is plainly, and by explication: in them, somewhat darkly; in this clearly, evidently, expressly.

And such an Express and Command, was necessary. For such is the deceitfulness of mans heart, that he is apt to flatter himself, and to conceive, that when he hath forborn the outward Act, he hath done Gods will. This is apparent in the young *Pharisee*, who, because he had lived *ἀμύπτως*, a blameless and a good moral life; and outwardly observed *Moses* law, professed openly: All these have I observed from my youth. And again it is more evident in the old *Pharisees*, that confined the duties to the external

Luc. 18. 21.

external act. So that it was necessary for our Saviour to teach these *Rabbies*, that *Moses* meant somewhat beyond what the bare words sounded, *Mat. 5. You have heard, that it was said by them of old, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not commit adultery; But I say, Causeless anger, desire of revenge, lust after a woman, is a breach of the Law.*

Thus much a man, being over-indulgent to himself, would never have thought of; and therefore God by an express and peremptory Law hath commanded, *Non concupiscas, Thou shalt not covet.* And the examination of our ways by this, will conclude the most strict liver and Pharisee under sin, and make him cry out with *S. Paul, O miserable man that I am! who shall deliver me from this body of death?* *Rom. 7. 24.*

Concupiscence is that which is here prohibited, not simply all, but that which is evil; For our desires are of two kinds, good and evil.

1. There is a good desire. A good desire of superiority, *1 Tim. 3. 3.* A good desire of punishment upon a malefactor, *Dent. 13. 8, 9.* A lawful desire of women, meat, and drink. *a* A lawful desire of goods and riches; A good desire that truth should flourish, and a good lust of the *spirit* against the *flesh*, *Gal. 5. 17.* *a Gen. 24. 3. Jo. 4. 6. Prov. 30. 8. Jo. 17. 17.*

So long as the desire is regulated and kept in by the Law of God, it is good and necessary, and God hath left it impressed in the soul, as the incentive to all duties, both Religious, Natural, and Moral.

2. But besides this good desire, there is a bad, which is called *the old man*, *Eph. 4. 22. Sin that dwells in us, Rom. 7. 5. The sting of death, 1 Cor. 15. 56. The thorn in the flesh, 2 Cor. 12. The concupiscence of men, 1 Pet. 4. 7.* Which is a foolish, hurtful desire retain'd in the sensual part of the *b* soul, which is so far from being a help to the understanding and will as it ought, that it darkens and seduceth it. *b Pet. 2. 11. Acts 7. 51.*

And hence it comes to pass, that an object of profit or pleasure being proposed, it is first delighted with it, then it stays and dwells on that delight, after it consents to receive it, or at least, doth not resist or reject it, rather sets the
S thoughts

thoughts to compass it, or at last yields to act it.

By this gradation, sin from the conception is brought to the birth : which progress *S. James cap. 1. ver. 14, 15.* hath thus excellently expressed, *Every man is tempted, when he is drawn away by his own lust, and enticed.* Then when lust hath conceived, it brings forth sin, and sin, when it is finished, brings forth death.

Evident here it is, that Lust in the heart of man, is as it were the *Matrix*, in which sin first receives the conception, articulation, life, motion, and growth, till it come to the Birth : and the Midwives, as I may so say, to bring it forth, are *the lusts of the flesh, the pride of life, and the lust of the eyes*, that is, profit : Which last is especially forbidden in this Commandment. And two Objects are here named.

1. Our neighbours goods, *His house, his servants, his cattle.*
 2. Our neighbours wife, *Thou shalt not covet, &c.*
- Because men commonly lust after these.

1. By wanton fleshly desires, they lust after their neighbours wife.
2. By covetousness, they lust after their neighbours goods, his house, his man-servant, his maid-servant, his ox, his ass.

And yet these are not all the irregular lusts, by which a man is tempted, and drawn away, and enticed. There is,

a Hab. 2. 9.
Judg. 9. 7, 15,
21.

b 1 Sam. 18. 5,
ad 21.

c 1 Reg. 18. 17.
Mat. 9. 3, 4,
&c.

1. *a* A lusting after our neighbours dignity, honour, place, through pride and ambition. This is pride of life in *S. John*.
2. *b* A lusting after our neighbours blood, and life, out of envy, hatred, malice, revenge. These are lusts of the flesh.
3. *c* A lust to take away our neighbours good name and reputation ; arising out of the same, or other vicious causes.

Tertul. de pal-
lin.

That therefore no man should conceive that his covetous, and *wanton lusts* were alone restrained, and not his proud, and ambitious, revengeful, malicious, and envious also ; that no man dream of a liberty in any ; it hath pleased the Law-giver here to give a *καθάρσιον*, a Purge to all, and

and to set a Bar to all, by this general Prohibition.

Thou shalt not covet his ox, nor his ass; nor any thing that is his.

His honour is his, his life is his, his good name is his, as well as his wife, his man-servant, his maid-servant, his ox, or his ass; and therefore we may no more covet to take from him the one, than the other: what is his, he must quietly, and peaceably enjoy.

1. In this Precept is commanded,

1. *a* That we be content with our own, and the portion that God gives us. *a* Phil. 4. 11, 12.
2. *b* Not to be covetous of what is another mans. *b* Isa. 5. 8.
3. *c* That we labour in that Vocation, to which God hath called us, honestly. *c* Eph. 4. 28.
4. *d* That the commencement of any motion to desire what is anothers, is to be disbanded instantly, and not suffered to stay in the appetite in any degree of morose delectation. *d* Acts 20. 33, 34. Gal. 5. 24.
5. *e* That those things be our neighbours which God hath given him. *e* Acts 5. 4.
6. *f* That by this gift every man hath a property, and distinct right, in that he possesseth; and therefore no man may desire to invade or dispossess him. *f* Hab. 2. 5, 6.
7. *g* That we fight against fleshly lusts, and labour to mortifie, crucifie, and subdue them. *g* Eph. 6. 12. Rom. 8. 3. Gal. 5. 24.
8. *h* That we stop sin in the beginning, and rest not till extinguished. *h* Cor. 9. 27. Prov. 1. 10, ad 20.

2. Offenders against this Command, are

1. *a* They who envy other mens wealth and prosperity. *a* Mat. 20. 15.
2. *b* They which desire passionately to possess what is another mans. *b* 1 Reg. 21. 4.
3. *c* They who with greediness pursue riches, honours, pleasures. *c* Micah 2. 1, 2.
4. *d* They who are over-sollicitous, careful, vexed, distracted, disquieted about the purchase of worldly things. *d* Mat. 6. 24. ad 34.

- e Prov. 30. 14, 15. 5. e They who have sufficient, still desire more.
 f 2 Thef. 3. 11. 6. f They who are idle, and labour not in an honest way to get their living.
 Gen. 47. 3. 7. g They who stifle not sin in the conception and birth; or, being brought forth, do not mortifie and crucifie it.
 Rom. 7. 13, ad 25. Many other offences there are against Gods Law, but they may, either by these general rules, be discovered; or else by the particulars, known: there being very few which will not with ease be reduced to one or other of those heads above mentioned. Some of these are here twice set down, and under divers Commandments, because Divines sometimes reduce them to one Commandment, and sometimes to another.

g Rom. 8. 5, ad 13.

Quest. Whether is a man able of himself to do these duties to God and man?

Ans. No. For, my good child, know this, that thou art not able to do these things of thy self, nor to walk in the Commandments of God, and to serve him without his special Grace.

Here I thought good to insert this discourse about the ability of man to keep Gods Law.

Mat. 19. 17. When the young man came to our Saviour to ask him the way to Heaven, the answer which Christ returned was, *If thou wilt enter into life, keep the Commandments*: and no question, were a man able to keep the way without erring, or stand upright in the way without slipping or falling, this very way would bring a man safe to life. For
 Ezek. 20. 13. it was not said in vain, *He that does these things shall live in them.*

Mat. 7. 13, 14. b A hard, narrow, and straight way indeed it is, yet it would be considered, whether out of wilfulness we do not desert it, and, under pretence of difficulty and disability, take liberty to satisfy our own lusts and affections, and to break asunder those bonds, and cast away those cords, by which the very light of reason (which is a ray of the Divine Image, shining yet in our souls) would fasten and oblige us.

To open this Point fully: Man must be considered either

as

as a meer natural man, or as supported by special Grace.

1. Let man be considered in the state of nature only, though he cannot shake off sin, that hangs so fast on, nor repents the dominion of it universally; yet he may forbear many evil outward actions in particular, to which he returns *like a dog to his vomit*, in which he wallows *as a swine in the mire*. For though imbred concupiscence doth tempt and incline, yet it doth not confine and determine any man to this or that sin in particular; as to act this murder, this adultery, that theft, that slander, &c. 2 Pet. 2. 22.

And this is manifest, because reason in man is *Natural Grace*; it being a gracious part in God, to make man a reasonable creature: and this light of reason shews, that there is somewhat of its own nature, virtuous and just, which is to be prosecuted; somewhat vicious and unjust, which is to be avoided, though there never had been any positive Law to command the one, or to restrain the other. Were right reason then heard to speak, the outward acts of Gods Commands would not easily be disobeyed. The first Reason. Rom. 2. 14, 15.

Examine but every Precept apart, and the reason of the observance will appear so equal, that it will be no hard matter to judge by what irrational persuasions a man is drawn away from his own power and abilities, as if he were unwilling to use it against his pleasing desires.

1. By the very first Commandment he is enjoined to subject himself to Almighty God as a Superiour Power, to serve him as his Lord, to adore him as his Maker, to love and honour him as his Father. There is nothing but corrupt reason that can entice him to the breach of this Command. For let him deliberate with that natural understanding with which God hath endued him, and reason will dictate thus much, That it is both just, safe, and beneficial that man, being Gods subject, servant, child, creature, do render unto his supreme Lord, Master, Father, Creator; fidelity, service, fear, reverence, love, honour.

2. From this step, to the next of Gods Laws. Thou shalt not make thy self any graven image, Thou shalt not bow down to it, and worship it. What difficulty, what impossibility,

impossibility is there in this, that it may not be kept? For what man, endued only with the light of reason, and is not forsaken of God, will prostrate himself before, and call upon a blind, deaf, dumb, dead stock, far more worthless than the meanest creatures? Who can imagine to represent an infinite essence, and a spirit, by finite and material lines? which is so far, not only against reason, but even common sense, that *David* made it a *Quere*, whether the Idolater or the Block, to which he boweth, were more senseless, *Psal.* 135. 18.

3. But sure I am, the rash and foolish breach of the third Command, admits no excuse for it, but Custom, which aggravates all other sins. Pleasure it hath none to speak for it, profit ordinarily it brings none, which are the two great inchanters of mortal men, and advocates for other transgressions. Theft gives satisfaction to our needs. Adultery to our lust. Oppression to our ambitious, covetous heart. But this contempt and abuse of Gods name satisfies no sense, advanceth not the estate. Advise then with Reason, and she will tell you, that there is no reason to be given, why any man should take Gods name in vain, except he desires to dwell with everlasting burnings.

4. No nor any reason for the breach of the next: very much for the observation of it. For, what burden, what pain, what inconvenience is there in this, to set apart a day to the service of God, and rest from our ordinary labours? rather what great ease, what equity? God bestows upon us six days, 'tis but reason then the seventh be his, and that it be a resting day, a holy day, a day of rest, for the content of the servant, and the comfort of the master: a day of holiness, in which both master and servant may tender their devotions, and express their thanks to their good Lord.

Were these Dictates of nature well learned, and weighed, all the pretended difficulties of the first Table would vanish; and easie it would be to persuade obedience to these wholesome Laws. And the self-same light of nature, that persuades to piety, would persuade to justice and charity also.

1. For, do not children receive from their parents their natural life, livelihood, education? Have they not begotten us, born us, cherished us in our weak and helpless infancy, and bestowed upon us the harvest of their labours, cares, sorrows? Were this well thought on, it could never be held a burden, that we return unto them due respect, honour, love for love; since natural reason, and affection inclines men to be grateful towards great benefactors.

2. To proceed; remove those following Laws, and whose life, whose wife, whose goods, whose good name can be freed from invasion? He that will not kill, may have a design to do it; and he that will not defile his neighbours wife, yet may have a lustful eye: Now all these injuries and desires, God hath stav'd off, with this one Dictate and maxime of nature, *Quod tibi fieri non vis, alteri ne feceris*. Kill not, do not covet to kill. Pollute not, do not covet to pollute. Steal not, do not desire to steal. Be-lye not, do not desire to be-lye another; because, thou thy self art offended, if another do, or covet to do, in any of these, the least wrong unto thee.

The sum of all this is, that the Commands of the Decalogue are highly consonant to the rule of Reason; and for the outward acts, and gross breaches thereof may be forborn by any man, who will hearken to what his reason will teach him.

This is manifest also, in that the lewdest man attempts not malicious wickedness without some precedent deliberation. A debate there is betwixt reason and passion, pleasure, profit, and the soul, before the consent is gotten, and reason being over-born by self-love, yields against the evidence of conscience. *Video meliora, proboque; Deteriora sequor*; and then follows a free election and contrivance by what means the plot may be brought to pass. And yet when it comes to the birth, and is ready to be delivered, the most wicked man will hold in, and restrain himself, put case the eye of some honest *Cato*, the reverence of some man he honours, some present fear or danger

The second Reason.

danger doth over-awe him. Why is it else, that sin is delay'd, sought to be put off to darknes, to corners, and to be acted in another place and time? This clearly shews, that it is more possible for a natural man to keep the outward act of Gods commands, than he usually doth.

The third Reason.

Lastly, this is evident even by the laws of men, who have set penalties upon those who break the Moral Law. Now it were unreasonable for a Prince to lay a punishment on that crime which is unavoidable. These very penalties then sufficiently demonstrate, even in the judgment of men, Notorious crimes (such as are murders, adulteries, thefts, perjuries, &c.) might be avoided by meer natural men, were but the Law of Reason heard to speak.

Thus it is with nature in those actions which are manifestly ill; as for those which are good, a possibility there is, even of a meer natural man, to perform many a moral act, which for the substance of the work is simply good, and yet is omitted. Evident it is, that he, who is *luxuriosus*, carnal, may give a cup of cold water to one that belongs to Christ, he may cast two mites into Gods Treasury, he may give meat to the hungry, and drink to the thirsty, or, he may if he please, omit it, or deny it. Which because he could do, and did not, he is justly condemned, *Mat. 25. 42.*

But what then? What? Are the Commandments of God to be kept by a meer natural man? I say it not. Thus much only; that many outward scandalous acts may be restrained, and forborn: many good actions that are omitted, done by observation of the rules of nature. Men, considered as men, may be far better morally, than they are: less sinful, more charitable, more just; though in the inward part and actions of obedience, they will come far short.

Chrys. de pen. hom. 8. Basil. in Psal. 118. Aug. de Temp. ser. 61. ver. 191 Idem de Natura & Gratia, c. 3. & 69. I dem in Psal 56. Hieron. exp. Symb. ad Damasum.

And this I take to be the meaning of the Ancients, *Chrys. Basil. August. Hieron. Concil. Araus. c. 25.* who with one mouth affirm, *Deus non mandat impossibilia.* God commands no impossible things: and *S. Augustine's* reason is, *quia justus est*, because he is a just God. He doth not

as

as *Pharaoh*, require the tale of brick, where he denies the straw.

2. *Not without his special grace.*

You have seen how far the Commandments are possible and may be kept by a meer moral or natural man. But besides these outward acts, there be many inward, and from both these there issue many other duties, which for many causes may be defective, yea, and will be defective so long as we carry about us this body of sin. There is one perfection of this life, another of the life to come. Now the Law of God expects from us in this life, not absolute perfection, but such a perfection as is to be had in this life, which the school calls *perfectio viatorum*, the perfection of way-faring men, and define it thus; When the will of man habitually entertains nothing that is contrary to the love of God. *Thom. 2. 2. 4. 44. art. 4. ad secundam.*

To arrive to this pitch the power of nature is too weak, it must be attained by the grace, or (as our Catechism hath taught us) by the *special grace of God*: for it is peculiar to those who are born again, sanctified by the Spirit of God, cleansed by Christs blood, engrafted and made partakers of the Divine Nature; *Without me*, saith our Saviour, *you can do nothing*, Joh. 15. 4, 5.

But with him, that is, Christ, they may do much; they may go far, they may walk uprightly and sincerely in this way. Poor and infirm people, that conceive the contrary, have not yielded themselves to be governed by the Spirit of Christ. Would they but make a tryal, they should find that true, which *S. Paul* confessed by experience in himself: He complained of the *thorn in his flesh*, but after he had received *sufficient grace*, he confesseth that *Christs yoke was easie, and his burden light*, that no command was grievous to him. *I can do all things through Christ that strengthneth me.* And *David*, that was troubled at his slips and falls, yet when God had once set his heart at liberty by this spiritual unction, could run the way of Gods Commandments: not walk softly, but run over them with great haste and pleasure.

T

Even

Even as a Cart-wheel, that creaks, and complains all the way it goes, under the smallest burden, while it remains dry ; but, having some small quantity of oyl put to it, runs on merrily, and without any noise : So also he that groans under the burden of Gods Law, and complains of the weight, of the uneasiness, of the difficulty of it, being suppled with this holy oyl, runs on with comfort, and murmurs not.

Gal. 6. 15.

This grace of God in this life, never raiseth the man to perfect, exact, and unsinning obedience ; but it makes him a *new creature*, creates in him a sincere obedience to the whole Gospel, it shuts the door against all temptations and security, sloth, presumption, hypocrisie, partial obedience, and habitual progresses in sin ; it teacheth and enables us to mortifie, crucifie, and shake off the fruits of the flesh ; and, upon our fallings, it quickens us to bewail and lament our frailties and infirmities ; for Christs sake, of our heavenly Father to beg a pardon, and ever after to reform and amend what is amiss.

Luk. 1. 74. 75.

In this sense a regenerate man, assisted, or rather informed by the *special grace of God*, may, nay must walk in the Commandments of God, and serve him ; This is the condition of the second Covenant, and Gods grace, shed in a good mans heart, inables to perform it : which obedience, when it is truly and faithfully done, though mixed with much weakness and imperfection, and many sins, (so that they be not leavened with wilfulness and impenitence) God hath promised to accept and crown.

Heb. 9. 15.

For, for our comfort, the Law is now in the hand of a Mediator ; and, having the whole in his own hand, he could make what order for it he pleased. Among others, that was one, that if there be in a man a ready will, 2 Cor. 8. 12. a man shall be accepted according to that he hath, and not according to that he hath not. How kindly did he accept the poor widows two mites ? How candidly did he take *Maries* box of spikenard, because that little they did, was all they could do ?

Luk. 21. 2, 3, 4.
Mat. 26. 13.

1 Tim. 2. 5.

This Mediator is the man Christ Jesus, and he well remembers

remembers of what mould we are made, and therefore being a compassionate High-Priest, he will take all well that is done with an honest and good heart, and intercede for the imperfections. Had there been a bruise in the reed, *Moses* would have broke it quite ; no more than an Ember in the flax, the severe Law-giver would quench that. But he who hath undertaken to be our Mediator, will not deal so with us : mediate he will, and strengthen the bruise ; plead for he will, and blow up, not blow out this little ember. His hand will not break the one, nor his foot tread out the other. Blessed be God, this is the help those, who are *born of the Spirit*, are like to have from the bowels of a Mediator.

Heb. 9. 11, 20.
Heb. 7. 25.

Mat. 12. 20.

Now look upon him as a Judge, and then there is great comfort likewise. For howsoever those who are none of Christs shall appear and answer at the great Tribunal of Justice ; yet all they that belong to him shall take their tryal at the Bar of Mercy.

Into this Court he is pleased to remove, where exalting, or rather super-exalting his Throne of Grace, all his are to answer to these Articles.

1. Whether they have hearkened to grace, and have had a care, a respect, an eye, a love to Gods Commandments ?

2. Whether their hearts were troubled, that their care was not such as it ought, nor their obedience equal and correspondent to their love and desires ?

3. Whether they have not grieved, quenched, done despite to the Spirit of Grace ?

4. Lastly, whether they have daily prayed for increase of grace, whether daily for remissions of sins, which was also one of the Commands of this Mediator, *Dimitte nobis debita nostra*, Forgive us our sins, and lead us not into temptation ? And if we can answer with a good conscience to these interrogatories, our desires and endeavours will pass for real performances, our sorrow for not keeping will be accepted ; and our asking of pardon, procure and obtain mercy.

Quest. How is this special grace and help to be attained?

Ans. By prayer; for, *Cæli clavis, Oratio*. Prayer is the key that opens the gate of Heaven, and moves God to bestow a blessing: whence it was, and is good counsel, *Ascendat oratio, ut descendat gratia*, Let prayer ascend, that grace may descend: And thus much this Catechisin intimates, warning us at all times to call for this special grace, by diligent prayer.

Quest. Is there any rule and form of prayer prescribed?

Ans. Yes, The Lords Prayer. When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, Luk. 11. Which Command, no man can with a good conscience obey, that holds all set forms, necessary to be cast out of the Church. A prayer it is, full and comprehensive of all we can sue for; enlarge our selves we may, but more we cannot ask than is comprehended in it. In this, we have not only Christs name to countenance our suits, but words put into our mouths by Christ to sue in.

Amica & familiaris oratio est Deum de suo genere, ad aures ejus ascendere Christi orationem. Agnoscat pater filii sui verba, quum precem facimus; qui habitat intus in pectore, ipse sit in voce; & cum ipsum habeamus apud Patrem advocatum pro peccatis nostris, quando peccatores pro delictis nostris petimus; Advocati nostri verba promamus. Cyp. de orat. Dominicâ.

That is: It is a grateful, friendly, and familiar prayer, to intreat God by that Petition he framed; the prayer that Christ taught, ascending to his ears. Let the Father acknowledge the words of his own Son, when we pray; Let him who dwells in the heart, be in the voice: and since we have him an Advocate with the Father for our sins, when we poor sinners ask pardon for our offences, let us produce and send up the words of our Advocate.

In orat. Dom.

This by *Tertullian* is called *Legitima oratio*, The lawful prayer. And the Ancients began their Liturgy with it, *Et hac præmissa legitima oratione, jus est accidentium desideriorum*, this lawful prayer being premised, a right there was of succeeding petitions.

Quest. Let me hear therefore if thou canst say the Lords prayer?

Ans.

Ans. *Our Father which art in heaven, &c.*

Quest. *What desirest thou of God in this prayer?*

Ans. The answer in the Catechism, is in one continued tenour of words, which I digest into this form.

1. The sum of the Preface. *I desire my Lord God our heavenly Father, who is the giver of all goodness.*

2. The sum of the two first Petitions. *To send his grace to me and all people, that we may worship him and serve him.*

3. The sum of the third Petition. *That we may obey him as we ought to do.*

4. The sum of the fourth Petition. *And I pray God, that he will send us all things needful for our bodies and souls.*

5. The sum of the fifth Petition. *And that he will be merciful unto us, and forgive us our sins.*

6. The sum of the sixth Petition. *And that it will please him to save and defend us in all dangers, bodily and ghostly, and that he will keep us from all sin and wickedness, and from our ghostly enemy, and from everlasting death.*

7. The sum of the Close is this. *And this I trust he will do of his mercy and goodness, through our Lord Jesus Christ, and therefore I say, Amen. So be it.*

Thus far the Catechism, to which I shall make bold to adde a few brief Notes, for further Explication.

THE
EXPOSITION
OF THE
THIRD PART
OF THE
CATECHISM.
BEING THE
LORDS PRAYER.

THis Prayer excels all other, not only for the Author, but also because in so short a compass of words, it comprehends a whole Sea of matter. *Compendium paucorum verborum quot attinguntur? edicta Prophetarum, Evangeliorum, Apostolorum, Sermones Domini, parabole exempla, præcepta.* Tertul. de orat. Dom. c. p. 9. It is the Breviary or Epitome of the whole Book of God. For in this Epitome of words, the substance of the Law and Gospel is delivered; our love, with the expressions of our duties intimated; good things for our selves and our brother desired.

1. Honour exhibited, when we call him Father. 2. Faith in the invocation of his Name. 3. A tender of our obedience in his will. 4. A commemoration of our hope, in his Kingdom. 5. A petition of life, in bread. 6. A confession of sin, in our begging of remission. 7. Our care to avoid temptations, in our request for defence and tutelage.

That I may say the same over again a little more plainly, observe, I pray, how the body of this Prayer, answers

swers to the body of the Law.

1. God is *our Father*. Therefore have no other Gods.
2. God is in *Heaven*. Therefore have no graven Image.
3. *Hallowed be his Name*. Therefore take it not in vain.
4. *His will be done*. Therefore not our own, especially on *Isa. 57. 13.* his day.
5. *Give us daily bread*. Therefore not to take it by killing, stealing, &c.

6. *Lead us not into temptation*. Therefore not to tempt our selves, by suffering our eyes to gaze upon strange flesh, which is an occasion of adultery : or by letting covetous motions enter into our hearts. This is to covet.

7. Trespassers we are all, and therefore had need to pray, *Forgive us our trespasses. Docet dominica oratio nos esse peccatores, & totam vitam esse pœnitentiam*, The Lords Prayer teacheth, that we are sinners, and that our whole life ought to be a life of repentance.

In little you see much is comprehended. As for the method of it, it is admirable, and the order wonderful ; the Petitions being not nakedly set down, but headed with a solemn Preface ; nor abruptly broken off without a reasonable and most weighty Conclusion. On both sides there is a hedge set, to teach us that we break not in upon God irreverently in our Petitions, nor break from him unmannerly, and abruptly. There be of this Prayer

- Three parts {
1. The Head, Preface, or *Exordium*.
 2. The Body, consisting of six Petitions.
 3. The Foot, or Conclusion, or *Doxology*.

The three first Petitions concern God.

The three last Petitions concern Man, or our selves.

And by this method we are to learn, that our first and chief care, ought to be the glory of God, the advancement of his Kingdom, and obedience to his will : after which, we may petition for our selves. Mat. 6. 33.
1 Cor. 10. 31.

To which if you annex the *Doxology*, in which we close with Gods glory, the observation will be enlarged and strengthened, viz. that the glory of God ought to be our first

first and our last aim ; for that which concerns us is limited and circumscribed with it.

The Preface to this Prayer is

Our Father which art in heaven.

In which, we are {
to take notice of {
1. The title, *Father.*
2. The possessive, *Our Father.*
3. The adjunct, *Which art in heaven.*

1. *Father.*

Isa. 64. 24.

1 Joh. 5. 14.

15.

Psal. 103. 13.

Luk. 15. 18, 20.

In what sense God is our Father, and we his Children, is expressed before. But this name is by our Saviour made choice on here, because it, of all other, may give encouragement to Petitioners. To the throne of grace it is they come and ask, on which their Father sits, as the great Master of Requests : and what is it that is reasonable and beneficial, that a father will deny the son he loves ? *Paterni est animi velle subvenire*, No man so easily intreated as a father to help a child. This is our Saviours argument to encourage us to ask, seek, and knock, Luk. 11. 13. *If you who are evil, give to your children good things, how much more will your heavenly Father, give the spirit to those that ask him ? &c.* This name put heart into the Prodigal, *I will arise and go to my Father.* And what came of it ? a pardon granted, and sealed with a kiss. *When his father saw him afar off, he had compassion on him, he ran to meet him, and fell upon his neck, and kissed him.* But I pray observe, that this Prodigal approached not his fathers presence without confession and submission : on which terms if you come, you shall be accepted : if with an impudent boldness, rejected. For as a fathers name is a word of love, so is it of reverence also.

Mal. 1. 6.

2. *Our.*

Isa. 64. 8.

Mal. 2. 10.

Ephes. 4. 6.

Father, is a term of relation, *Our*, of appropriation, yet so, that it intimates a community : the meaning is, that God is so our Father, that he is also the Father of all our Brethren, whom S. Peter charges us to love, *Love the Brother-*

Brotherhood, 1 Pet. 2. 17. Now this love and charity cannot be better expressed than by a prayer for them. In these our devotions then our brethren must not be forgotten. As there is a Communion of Saints, so the Saints ought to Communicate in each others prayers. Here we begin with *Our Father*, and the Petitions that concern our selves, following, are set down plurally. *Forgive us, Lead us not, Deliver us: Us*, others, not me only. In doing this office, we shall follow our Saviours example, *Job*. 17. 20. and execute *S. Pauls* injunction, 1 Tim. 2. 2. *Let prayers be made for all men.*

Luc. 5. 16.
1 Tim. 2. 1.
Mat. 5. 44.

3. Which art in Heaven.

By these words we are not to conceive, that the infinite Essence of Gods Majesty can be confined by any limits, no not of the Heaven it self; for the Heaven of Heavens are not able to contain him, 1 Reg. 8. 27. *Psal.* 139. 8. But in Heaven this our Father is said to be,

1. *a* For the manifestation of his Glory to the Saints and Angels, who enjoy the beatifical vision in that place.

a Mat. 17. 2.
&c.

2. *b* For that his Wisdom appears most in the rule of the motions of those heavenly bodies, by which all inferiors are ruled.

2 Cor. 12. 4.
1 Joh. 3. 2.
b Psal. 115. 3.
Isa. 66. 1.

3. For that the gifts we ask and expect come from thence. *Every good gift, and every perfect giving is from above, and comes down from the Father of lights*, Jam. 1. 7.

Jer. 23. 24.
Psal. 19. 1.

4. *c* For his purity and holiness. No part of the World so free from impurity and dregs, as the Heavens are; and therefore none so fit to be his seat. A place like himself.

c 2 Pet. 3. 13:
Psal. 11. 4.
Hab. 2. 20.

When we say then, God is in Heaven, it is all one, as if we did acknowledge, that we meant not for supply of our wants to depend upon any Father upon earth, *Mat.* 9. 23. Since we have a Father above, who is of more infinite Glory, Power, Majesty; of greater wisdom, liberality, purity; than any earthly father can be.

1. This clause supplies the Deacons office in the Primitive Church, and calls aloud *Sursum corda*, Lift up your hearts. To which we are to answer, *Habemus ad Dominum*, We

Psal. 25. 1.
Psal. 123. 1, 2.
1 Tim. 2. 8.

lift them up unto the Lord. Base thoughts; and earthly cogitations, become not a Son that petitions to a Father in Heaven. The Synagogues were placed upon hills: *Sion* on a mount, *opus est ascensu ad Dominum*, intimating that the whole man in his devotions should ascend and approach as near God as is possible.

2. And yet with this cautelous *Memorandum*, that he is in Heaven, and we on earth: a great distance and disparity there is betwixt us. Homely and familiar behaviour, polluted and unclean lips and hands, do no way become us before so great and Sacred a Majesty. That though indeed we may be bold with him as sons, yet we may not be unmannerly and saucy, as if we were his fellows and companions. And I am verily perswaded, that whoso use it, are not truly sensible, or do believe that they are in the presence of their heavenly Father. Wise *Solomon* gives this advice, *Ecc. 5. 1. Be not hasty with thy mouth to speak a word before God*: Not a word, no babbling then, no *πολυλογία*, vain repetitions; And why so? He is in Heaven, and thou on earth; therefore let thy words be few.

Luk. 18. 13.

Dan. 9. 8.

Heb. 12. 28.

The first Petition.

Hallowed be thy Name.

The three first Petitions are rather Acclamations than Prayers, in which we absolutely vote, for, and to God, without any condition or limitation, *Honour, Power, Obedience*. And this is *Votum caput*, the first vote; because the Glory and Honour of God is the ultimate end, and therefore must be the first in our intentions.

1 Pet. 2. 9.

Psal. 115. 1.

1 Cor. 10. 3.

Psal. 96. 8.

The *Name* of God is the representative of God himself, and by it, his Essence, his Attributes, his Word, any thing by which he is made known to us, and may be honoured by us, is understood.

Rev. 19. 2.

16a. 6. 3.

Hallowed, that is, Sanctified and Reverenced. We can neither adde to Gods Holiness, nor yet take from it: But we are said to hallow his Name, when we acknowledge it, and

and honour it for such, *Psal.* 96. 7, 8. Therein setting, as it were, a Crown of honour and holiness upon the head of God. For, to hallow, is to set apart a thing from the common use, to some proper end: that it be not abused and profaned, but holily and reverently used.

This his Name is honoured by our hearts, our mouths, our works.

1. *b* By our hearts, when in our very souls, we know and acknowledge him as God.

2. *c* By our mouths, when we call upon him, adore him, praise him.

3. *d* In our works and lives, when we live as becomes Christians. *So let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.* For where this is not done, his Name is blasphemed among the Gentiles, *Rom.* 2. *Sicut virtutum fama ad nominis respondet gloriam, ita male conversantis infamia ad ejusdem nominis respondet injuriam.* As the fame of a virtuous life redounds to the glory of his Name, so doth the infamy of a vicious conversation to the injury of the same Name. That then which we vote here, is,

1. That there may be a reverence, awe, a separate respect wrought by his grace in us to his Majesty, his Attributes, his works of Grace, his Word, his Name, his Day, and to whatsoever is Sacred, or by which he may be known and honoured.

2. That this his Name may be magnified, adored, and advanced through all the World: and that all our acts of Religion, our prayers, our praises, our hymns and Liturgies may be useful and beneficial, and effectual for the dispersing his fame and honour.

3. That our lives may be conformable to our Religion, and so his Name may be sanctified not only by us, but in us: that we may purge out the filth of sin, and be holy, as he is Holy, *1 Pet.* 1. 14, 15, 16.

4. That the sins of sacrilege, profaneness, idolatry, irreverence, indevotion, be turned out of the world, and the contrary virtues of piety may be set up, and flourish among men.

Num. 8. 5.
&c. & 7. 10.
Levit. 25.
Exod. 29. 4.

1 Reg. 8.
Prov. 20. 25.
1 Pet. 3. 19.

Rom. 10. 10.
& 15. 6.

Rom. 2. 23,
24.

Mat. 5. 16.
Chrysol. *Ser.* 69.

Tertul. Cyprian.
Chrysol. in
Expō. Oratōis
Dominicæ.

to God! and now Let thy Kingdom come.

ARs 26. 18.

Col. 1. 13.

Chrysost. Ser. 67.

Col. 3. 15, 16.

Isa. 66. 2.

Mat. 10. 29,

30.

a Phil. 2. 10,

11.

b Eph. 1. 21,

22.

Col. 2. 15.

Psal. 2. 9.

1 Joh. 3. 8.

Rom. 6. 6.

Jude.

2 Thes. 2. 8,

&c.

c Rom. 14. 17.

d Psal. 51. 13.

e 2 Cor. 5. 20.

f Mat. 4. 23.

g Rom. 4. 11.

h 1 Cor. 4. 21.

This is the second vote. In which we petition that Satans kingdom may be abolished, and the kingdom of our Lord Jesus Christ advanced. *Regnavit diabolus, regnavit peccatum, regnavit mors.* The devil reign'd, sin reign'd, death reign'd, and mortal men for a long time were captive: here therefore we petition, that God being set upon the Throne, the devil may perish, sin may be destroyed, death may dye, and captivity may be led captive, that we being freed, may reign to eternal life.

This kingdom of Christ is threefold, of Power, of Grace, of Glory.

1. Of Power. For Heaven is his Throne, and Earth his footstool, and his will and providence the law by which all creatures work: will they, nill they, subject they must be; for *the Lord reigneth, be the people*, nay, devils themselves, never so impatient, Psal. 97. 1.

In order to this Kingdom, we pray,

1. a That all Angels, Men, and Creatures, may submit to his Command.

2. b That his enemies, whether men or devils, may be brought to confusion, and crush't with his rod of iron; That Satans power be destroyed, Sins weakned, Schismaticks, Hereticks, Hypocrites, and Prophane persons rooted out.

2. c There is also a kingdom of Grace, which our Saviour tells us, *is within us*, d Luc. 17. 21. The Spirit of God is the e Regent in this kingdom: The Ministers, Embassadors: The f Gospel, The Laws: g The Sacraments, The seals: The b Discipline of the Church, the rod: and all tends to the extirpation of sin, and establishment of righteoufness. *The Scepter of thy kingdom, O Lord, is a right Scepter*, PL. 45. 6.

In order to this kingdom, we pray,

a Rom. 7. 6.

Gal. 5. 16.

1. a That the Spirit of God may reign in our hearts, and there exercise absolute dominion, casting down every high thought

thought ruling in the Understanding by faith, in the Will by charity, in the Passions by mortification, in the whole body by obedience.

2. *g* That there may be in us a ready submission to his Embassadors, his Laws, his Discipline, and a right use of the Sacraments.

2 Cor. 10. 5.
Rom. 1. 17.
Col. 3. 14.
Col. 3. 5.
Rom. 6. 19.
g Heb. 13. 17.

3. That the peace, truth and glory of the Gospel may be published and preached through the whole World, making a greater progress, extending it self where it is not, and intended where it is.

4. *k* There is yet a third kingdom, that of Glory : in which, at *l* Christs second coming, the subjects of grace, shall *m* receive the glory prepared for them.

k Isa. 60. 3.
l Gen. 9. 27.
m Joh. 17. 20.
Rom. 1. 10.
Rom. 8. 18.

In order to this kingdom, we pray,

1. *a* That his kingdom of grace, which hath so much of *a* Phil. 1. 23. sin and infirmity in it, be translated into his kingdom of Rev. 22. 20. glory.

2. *b* That the number of the elect being accomplished, *b* 1 Tim. 4. 8. the final dissolution of all things may come, that we may Joh. 14. 3. obtain full salvation and redemption, and enjoy the glory prepared for us.

3. *c* That God would get himself glory, by the final doom and destruction of his enemies.

c Psal. 68. 1.
1 Cor. 15. 24.
25, 52, 53.

Thy will be done in earth as it is in Heaven.

This is the third vote. And it is a most just request, and well succeeds the former, in that the former will never take effect without this. Equal it is, that if he be our King, we obey his will, without which he will not graciously reign over us, Mat. 7. 21. *Not every one that calls me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven, but he that doth the will of my Father which is in heaven.*

Two things are here } 1. The Petition, *Thy will be done.*
considerable. } 2. The Manner, *In earth as it is in Heaven.*

1. *Thy*

1. *Thy will be done.*

Deut. 29. 29.

The will of God ^{1.} His revealed Will. *Signi.*
is double, ^{2.} His secret Will. *Beneplaciti.*^{1.} His revealed Will is his Word, his Commands, whatsoever they are in the Old or New Testament. Those which belong to Faith and Manners. In order to this Will, we pray,^a Rom. 12. 2.

Joh. 4. 34.

Eph. 6. 6.

Heb. 10. 7.

^b Rom. 13. 14.^{1.} That we enquire, what ^a the good and acceptable will of God is, and make it the rule of all our actions, from thence take our advice and counsel, and not from our own corrupt hearts. *Ne fiat voluntas carnis, Fulfil b not the lusts of the flesh.*^c 1 Thess. 4. 3.^{2.} That since we know his ^c will is our sanctification, ^{4.} 1 Thess. 4. 5. we let him have his will, and be *holy*, as he is *Holy*.^{2.} His secret Will is that whereby he determines of all events, good or bad; for there is nothing comes to pass without his Will. This must not be the rule of our actions, (for it is hid from us) but it is of our sufferings and passions, and to it we are bound to submit, as did *S. Paul*, that being told of his sufferings at *Jerusalem*, professed, *That he was not only ready to be bound, but to dye for it.* To which the Church submits, saying, *The will of the Lord be done*: and so our Saviour, *Not my will, but thine be done*, Luk. 22. 42.2. *In earth as it is ⁱⁿ Heaven.*

This is the manner how his revealed Will must be done by us, and his secret Will submitted to, when he will have it done by us, after an Angelical pattern; and if so, done it will be,

^a Psal. 119. 16.

32. 47.

^b Luk. 19. 5.^c Deut. 5. 28,

29.

Psal. 119. 10.

^d Psal. 119. 12.

Psal. 119. 6.

^e Luk. 1. 6.

- ^{1.} ^a Cheerfully, without grudging and murmuring.
- ^{2.} ^b Readily, without let or delay.
- ^{3.} ^c Sincerely, without hypocrisy and doubling.
- ^{4.} ^d Constantly, without flitting.
- ^{5.} ^e Wholly and universally, without chusing and excepting.

6. *f* Harmoniously, peaceably, and in much unity, not *f* Rom. 12. 18.
grieving, envying, afflicting, or persecuting a fellow-ser- *Heb. 12. 14.*
vant. *Act. 2. 1.*

It is well observed, that these three votes are addressed to *D. Thylour in*
God by way of Adoration. In the first, the soul puts on the *vita xpi part.*
affections of a child, that regards the fathers interest, ho- *2. disc. 11.*
nour, and glory. In the second, the duty of a subject to
his legitimate Prince, seeking the promotion of his regal
Power. In the third, the affection of a Spouse, that sub-
mits and conforms to her Husbands will, loving what he
loves, and chusing what he makes choice of.

Give us this day our daily bread.

* Those Petitions now follow that concern our selves and
our profit. Gods three stand first, as in reason they ought.
For *seek first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness:* and *Mat. 6. 33.*
now our three follow, which will also declare our depen-
dance upon him. 1. By asking of him our daily bread, we
shew that we depend upon his *a* fatherly providence for our *a* *Mat. 6. 30,*
livelihood. 2. By suing for remission, we depend upon his *32.*
meer mercy for our pardon and forgiveness of *b* our sins. *b* *Eph. 2. 4, 5.*
3. By seeking freedom from Temptations, that we *c* depend *c* *1 Cor. 10. 13.*
upon his power and might to resist the Devil and his evil *Heb. 2. 18.*
motions. *Mat. 26. 41.*

Every man consists of a body and a soul: the soul, the
better part is least looked after, the body is most set by;
in which our Saviour graciously condescends to our weak
dispositions, and indulges that we ask first for the necessities
of that part we love best, desire necessary things for this bo-
dy, bread to eat, and clothes to put on, before that which
more nearly concerns us, remission of Sin, and liberty from *Gen. 28. 20.*
Evil, and Temptations.

It is his meaning by the gift of these to allure us the
more to ask, and be more earnest for heavenly and spiritual
gifts, and to conceive we shall not be denied, since he that
bestows the less, will not deny that which is more necessary *Act. 14. 15, 16,*
for us. *17.*

That which we ask here is *Bread*, but by it we are to
under-

Pfal. 27. 27.

Jer. 15. 9.

Prov. 31. 14.

understand all competent means and outward blessings that shall be meet for our necessity, for our Christian and sober delight : as health, wealth, food, raiment, physick, sleep, peace, seasonable weather, whatsoever we shall need all our days.

1. The person, to whom we come and ask, is our heavenly Father, him we are to intreat, *Give*, good Father, give, bestow, continue, and prosper.

2. The persons for whom we ask, *Us*. Not to me alone, but others also.

3. The matter for which we petition, *Bread*, which hath here three limitations.

1. *Our Bread*, that which we may have right to.

2. *πρώτον*, that which we need, or cannot be without, *ἡσῖα*, our substance will decay without it : or else *ἐπιούσιον*, that which, *ἐπι-ῖσιν*, is necessary for that day which is after this ; which we have need of all our lives.

3. *This day* : yet, good Father, this day bestow the present part.

a Hof. 2. 8, 9.

Pfal. 104. 27.

Gen. 28. 20.

b Job 31. 17,

18, 19, 26.

Ezek. 18. 7.

c Prov. 30. 8, 9.

d Prov. 20. 17.

e Thes. 3. 12.

Pfal. 128. 2.

f Prov. 25. 16.

Deut. 17. 16.

f1 Tim. 6. 8.

Mat. 6. 31, 32.

Pfal. 37. 3, 25.

a *Give*.] That teacheth us how to esteem of the things of this world, not as our own acquisitions, but as Deodates, gifts given by God to our prayers, and honest endeavours. Blessings these are that come from above.

b *Us*.] Bids us be charitable in our petitions and distributions of our bread ; we ask not only for our selves, and then may not keep all to our selves.

c *Bread*.] Is but simple fare, and intimates that we be content with a little.

d *Our*.] And yet how little soever this bread is, it must be our own bread, not stolen bread, no bread of deceit, not taken out of anothers mouth.

e *Daily bread*.] Bread instantly necessary : such provision, or such a proportion thereof, as all our lives shall best agree to our condition, and as is fit for our charge and calling.

f *This day*.] Not month or year : this teacheth us to restrain our care, and not to reach it too far ; Though we have it *hodie*, this day only, enough from hand to mouth, yet

yet we pine not away with an immoderate anxiety and vexation of getting more.

So that the meaning of this Petition is,

1. *a* That we beseech God to take us into his fatherly care, and distribute unto us this day, daily, or day by day, that which shall be sufficient, necessary or proportionable to the remainder of our lives. *a* Prov. 30. 8, 9. Gen. 8. 20. Exod. 16. 18. Psal. 37. 5.

2. Yet so, that we expect not, that he feed us, as he gave *b* bread to *Elisha*, or feed us immediately from Heaven *c* as he did *Israel* in the wilderness: But that he give it, by those means, by which he hath appointed us to receive it, *d* that is, upon prayer and honest labour. *b* 1 Reg. 17. 6. *c* Exod. 16. 14. *d* Luk. 11. 9. Gen. 3. 17.

3. *e* That he blest it to us, when he hath given it, make us content with it, and make it to us the staff of bread. For *in* *us* lives not by bread only, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God, Mat. 4. 4. *e* Psal. 128. 1. 1 Thes. 4. 11. Acts 18. 3. Phil. 4. 6. Prov. 10. 26. Isa. 3. 1. Dan. 1. 13. 14. 15. 1 Tim. 4. 4. f Joh. 6. 27.

4. *f* But *b* besides this ordinary bread, there is the bread that came down from Heaven, I mean Christ and his benefits represented, sealed, and exhibited to us in the Sacrament, this we are to desire, this to intreat God to give; For the other will perish, but this will nourish our souls to eternal life. And to this purpose *Tertullian*, *Cyprian*, and *Chrysolog*, interpret the Petition *loc. cit.* though they mention the former sense also.

Forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us.

This Petition well succeeds the other, because if not obtained, the other will not be granted, or if granted, will prove no blessing. God gave *Israel* quails at their request, but while the quails were yet in their mouths, the heavy wrath of God fell upon, and slew them, and smote down the chosen men that were in *Israel*. While a man then is in his sin, *b* either he asks, and hath not, or else God hears and gives in anger, and so he is not much the better. If therefore you intend to have bread, and the staff of bread, humbly beg. *a* Psal. 78. 30. 31. *b* Jam. 4. 2. 3. Hos. 13. 11.

Forgive us our trespasses.

1. To forgive, is to absolve and free from guilt and punishment.

2. Trespasses are all manner of offences, which in the Greek are styled *ῥηλήματα*, Debts. For so is every sin a Debt, and every man a Debtor. Bound he is to God in a duty of obedience, which because he pays not, he is bound to suffer the penalty, and were it not, that God for Christs sake did freely remit, and forgive it, he must lye in the *b* prison of Hell, till he pay the utmost farthing.

Two things are here implied.

c Pl. 51. 3, 4, 5. 1. *c* A free and humble confession, that we are debtors, } Originally.
 } Actually.

d Mich. 6. 6, 7. 2. *d* That we are utterly unable to make satisfaction.
Psal. 49. 7. And therefore we pray to God to remit and forgive ; *e* It
e Rom. 3. 23, 24 is only a free pardon that can do us good : For if he exact
Mat. 6. 14, 15. the debt, we are utterly undone.

f Mat. 18. 23, *f* Only with this *Proviso*, that this pardon may be as free
ad 35. and full to us, as the pardon we give to our brother, that hath offended us.

Forgive as we forgive, &c.

Which is a necessary qualification to make us capable of pardon at Gods hand, and teacheth us charity when we pray. For if you will not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your heavenly Father forgive you your trespasses, *Mat.* 6. 15, &c. 18. 23. Forgive as we forgive, sets limits, bounds, and stint to the pardon. *Tantum, Quantum.* Excellently *Chrysologus*, Ser. 67. *Quantum vis dimitti tibi, dimitte tantum ; quoties vis dimitti tibi, toties tu dimitte ; imo quia vis totum dimitti tibi, totum dimitte : Homo intellige, quia remittendo alius, tu tibi veniam dedisti.*

As much as thou desirest to be forgiven, forgive so much ; as often as thou desirest to be forgiven, forgive so often : yea because thou desirest the whole be forgiven thee, forgive the whole : O man know, that by pardoning others, thou hast obtained pardon for thy self.

The

The full explication of this Petition is in the Article of the Creed. I believe the Remission of sins.

Lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

Gods children having obtained forgiveness of sins, and so admitted to favour, have yet store of enemies; the devil, the world, and the flesh, which will be tempting to evil.

1. By temptation is meant all allurements of pleasure, of profit, of adversity, detriment, or danger, that may occasion our fall into sin.

2. To bring, or lead into it, or make to enter, is, to occasion our entering, by which we should be so entangled, *a* that we know no way out; and this God may do by sending an extraordinary measure of prosperity, or adversity.

Also, *b* by letting loose *Satan* to buffet us: or by leaving men to themselves, having withdrawn his Grace.

a Deut. 8. 15;
16.
Prov. 30. 8, 9.
b 2 Cor. 12. 7.
Hos. 5. 15.
2 Chr. 32. 31.

There is a double *Probationis*. Of Tryal, Probation.

Temptation, *Seductionis*. Of Seduction, Ruine.

1. The first way God is said to tempt, that is, to try and prove his children: and this is done in mercy and love, *a* either to make tryal of their faith, as in *Abraham*; or of *b* their patience, as in *Job*; or to shew the perfection of his Grace, *c* as in *S. Paul*; or to conform them unto Christ, *d* whose steps they must follow. Compare their temptation to a fire which burns out dross and corruption, and makes the metal the purer, and so God may be said to tempt, *Mal.*

3. 3. *I will sit as a refiner, and a purifier of silver*: because by this fiery tryal, the virtues of his children are made the clearer, their vicious inclinations being separated and removed. *When he hath tryed me, I shall come forth as gold*, Job 23. 10.

Now take temptations for tryals and probations of our faith, love, patience, or other virtues, then we simply and absolutely ask not of God, that we may be freed. Enemies

we have, without and within, *a* without the Prince of *darkness*: within our own *fleshy lusts*: flye then we must *b* not, or decline the encounter, but hold it a favour to be

a Gen. 22. 2.
b Job 1. 11, 12.
c 2 Cor. 12. 7.
d Rom. 8. 29.

a 2 Cor. 7. 5.
b Eph. 6. 11. *ad*
10.

drawn out against them. By their assaults, God intends to try our valour, and how we will stick to him. To this purpose S. James encourageth us ; *My brethren, count it exceeding joy when ye fall into temptation.*

Jam. 1. 2.

a Luk. 22. 31.
So Tertul. in-
terprets it,
*Ne patiaris in-
duci.*

2. a But there is another Temptation. A temptation to seduce, to overcome, to destroy, and undo us ; and against this we here pray ; *Lead us not*, or, as Cyprian reads it, *Ne patiaris induci*, Good Father, suffer us not to be led into that temptation, by which we may be overcome. This proceeds from evil, from which we beg of God to be freed in the next clause.

Deliver us from evil.

By evil some understand,

1. a The evil one, Satan, the Contriver, Artificer, that great Engineer or Tempter of, and to all evil.
2. b Others, the evil of sin, Rom. 7. 19, 21, 23.
3. c The temptation of our own heart, and lusts, Jam. 1.
4. d Mat. 26. 41.
5. e The temptation by evil enemies, or the world.
5. The evil that follows these, eternal death.

a Eph. 6. 16.
1 Joh. 2. 14.
2 Cor. 2. 11.
b Rom. 7. 24.
c Psal. 19. 13.
Gal. 5. 24.
d 1 Joh. 2. 16.

All may be well understood ; and then the sense will be, an humble Petition to God to free us from the power of the wicked one, from returning to our vomit, from the suggestions and corruptions of our own hearts, from the designs of worldly enemies, and from the consequent of these, *Damnation.*

More particularly we pray,

1. a That God would set limits to Satan, and restrain his fury, that he never have his will upon us.
2. b That he never so far take away his holy Spirit, or withdraw his Grace, that we be left in the hand of our own counsels, and delivered up to our own lusts, so that we cannot extricate our selves.
3. c That we may be delivered from obduration or hardness of heart ; the nearest step to eternal pain : from which, *Good Lord deliver us.*

a Zach. 3. 1, 2.
Acts 26. 18.
Rev. 12. 9, 10.
Acts 5. 3.
b Psal. 51. 11.
Psal. 81. 12.
Rom. 1. 26.
c 2 Thes. 2. 11.
Exod. 10. 27.
Eph. 4. 18, 19.
Heb. 3. 13.

Which because it is an act of power, therefore our Sa-
viour

viour hath taught us to pray in this form,

Πῶς αὐτῷ. Evehe nos à malo. Tertul.

a Deliver us, for it is a deliverance, a forcible rescuing; of our corrupt nature, which is not able, nor willing to help us out of these dangers. *a Luk. 1. 74. Rom. 7. 24. 2 Cor. 3. 5.*

b Lest any man should be insolent, proud, and arrogate too much to himself, and relye upon his own strength, we are admonished of our own weakness and disability; Christ here sets us to pray to him that is only able to deliver us, and so again, Mark 14. 38. Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation; the spirit indeed is ready, but the flesh is weak. *b Rom. 11. 20. 1 Cor. 10. 12. Phil. 2. 12, 13.*

As in the former of the Petitions there was an eye unto Gods glory, so in these three last is there a respect to our own wants. *Dr. Taylor loc. cit.*

In the first of which, the soul puts on the affection of a pure indigent beggar.

In the second, of a delinquent, but penitent servant.

In the third, of a person in affliction or danger.

For thine is the Kingdom, the power and the glory, for ever.

To begin well in any Christian duty, be it prayer it self, or to proceed in devotion, is not sufficient, except we end well too. And therefore here we are not taught only what to ask of God, but how to part from him also, after we have made our request in a reverent manner. To attribute much to him who gives all to us: that Majesty, that Power, that Glory, that Eternity is his. *Gal. 3. 1, 2, 3. Rev. 4. 11. Rev. 5. 13.*

And indeed the acknowledgment of these, is a principal motive to our prayers, and gives life, and puts spirit in them. So many props they are to our faith, and so many assurances that we shall be heard.

1. The Kingdom.

1. The first reason we petition to him is, because the Kingdom is his, he is the great King of all the earth. For a good and loving King is kind to his Subjects, and easie to be

be intreated. He is *Abi-meleck*; a fathers heart he puts on, carries the people in his bosom, and is ready to ask upon any grievance, *Quid populo, ui fleat?* What ailes the people
 1 Sam. 11. 3. to complain, that they weep? It will grieve him to see them
 1 Reg. 22. 17. scattered upon the mountains: grieve him to behold them consumed with a plague, 2 Sam. 24.

These are the bowels of a good King, and can we expect less freedom from God, than men can look from man? The strength then of the reason lies thus. Thou, O Lord, art the best King of all; and we are thy distressed subjects, who crave at thy hands things needful for us, and our welfare: Thou wilt not, we hope, be more hard to us, than good Kings are to their people: they sit in the gate, receive, hear, grant their requests, and therefore we are animated to come to thy Throne and ask, being fully perswaded, that thou wilt be intreated by us, because thine is the Kingdom.

2. The Power.

The second reason is drawn from the power of God. It were to no purpose to come, and ask of him, that is not able to bestow what we seek for. For be the will never so ready, yet where ability is wanting; the Petitioner shall be ne're the better. Now of his will we are assured, in that this King is our father; nothing then can hinder so kind a nature from doing his dearest subjects and children good; but want of power; which because he wants not, he cannot, he will not be wanting to us. In him is omnipotency, and all-sufficiency, he is the fountain of grace and strength: So that he that cannot relye upon him, for what is necessary for this life and another, doth as good as reproach him, when he acknowledgeth, *Thine is the Power.*

3. Thine is the Glory.

The third thing that animates our prayers is Gods glory, this is so proper unto him, that he will not part with it: *a My glory I will not give to another*; and plain he makes it, & that by honouring those that honour him, and bringing

Luk. 2. 14.

Eph. 1. 5.

Jam. 1. 18.

Gen. 17. 1.

Eph. 3. 20, 21.

a 1f. 42. 3, &c.

b 1 Sam. 2. 30.

ing down those, that would abase him, he aims at no one thing so much, as to get a name, to be exalted, to be glorified. c Exod. 14. 17. d Isa. 5. 16.

Now it makes much for his glory, that when a company of unworthy wretches, that can claim nothing at his hands, shall joyn to petition his Majesty, he will hear in Heaven, do, and grant what, were it not to set forth his glory, he never would. It was for his glory, that *e Joshua's* prayer staid the Sun; It was for his glory, that *f Moser's* prayer turned away his wrath. It was for his glory, that *g Elia's* prayer caused a drought, and after three years brought down showers of rain; It was for his glory, that *Hezekiah's* prayer brought down an Angel to destroy a whole army of *Affyrians*. The petitions he ever performed to any of his Saints redound to his glory, and stand in his Book to his eternal glory. When therefore we put him in mind of his glory, we have little cause to doubt of audience, because we do, as it were contend, and strive, and wrestle with him in our prayer by that he loves; and we need not fear, that if it be for his glory, but it shall be granted. i Reg. 8. 31. &c. e Josh. 10. 12. f Exod. 32. 30. 31, 32, 33. g Ja. 5. 17, 18. h Is. 37. 15, 16. i Gen. 32. 26. Dan. 9. 15, 17, 18, 19.

The strength then of the Argument lies thus. We know, O Lord, that thou art regardful to thy glory above all things: and thy glory it is, that we thy humble petitioners at thy feet aim at above all things. What an honour will it be to thy Majesty to feed us, that deserve it not: to cloath us, that earn it not: to forgive us, that are worthy of no pardon: to give us grace, that are ungracious and unprofitable servants: to get thy self honour upon those that dishonour thy Name, and refuse to do thy will, and to shew thy self a King against rebellious subjects? And therefore we doubt not, but thou wilt grant what shall so much redound to thy glory. These things, good Father, if thou wilt give and grant, as it is meet and right, and our bounden duty to pray for, then for all that we are, and all that we have; we will laud and magnifie thy holy Name, evermore praising thee, and saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God of Hosts; heaven and earth are full of thy glory. Glory be

Isa. 6. 3. to thee, O Lord, most high. And indeed he must be a proud and unworthy wretch, who when the works of God pass through his hands, will have some part of the glory stick to his own fingers.

4. *Ἔτι αἰῶνας. In secula.* For ever.
 a Psal. 136. a For ever, because his mercy endures for ever, as doth
 b Exod. 3. 14. b his essence and being : or in *secula*, in ages, that is, etern-
 c Dan. 2. 44. nity ; And thereby is put another difference between the
 & 4. 3. c Kingdom, Power, and Glory of God, which is eternal ;
 i Tim. 1. 17. without beginning, without end, and that of Princes, d whose
 d Dan. 4. 25. Kingdom, Power, and Glory fades away.

And this meditation, that he is *Rex in seculum*, a King for ever, doth much animate and encourage our prayers also. e Were he not *the same yesterday, to day, and for ever*, we should have cold comfort from a precedent example in our petitions. The prayer of *Elijah*, propoed by S. *James*, would put little heart into our Orizons, and the audience given to any of the Saints, were but a weak motive to fire our hearts and lips, did we serve a mutable, and a mortal God. f But in that he is *Idem*, the same he was, and g *Semper idem*, always the same he was, is a great comfort to us poor suiters. Merciful he was to those, that were subject h to the same passions that we are ; a propitious ear he lent to those, who were compassed about with the like infirmities that we are, i and therefore let us boldly approach the Throne of Grace, assuring our selves, that we may speed as well as they did.

By faith we are encouraged, and may be perswaded, that k we may be heard no less, than it *Phinehas, Elias, Peter, or Paul*, should present the Petition. They brought no more l merits to speak for them, than we can : zeal, and faith, and repentance, and a sincere heart they took along with them, with a memorial of Gods mercies, *Solius misericordiam*. m I will make mention of thy righteousness only. Their confidence was, that it was the same pitiful God, that had heard poor sinners before they were born, and would hear poor sinners to the end of the world : And this may

it may be ours, for he is that self-same God, *Qui audit pre-* n Psal. 65. 2.
cem, that hears prayers: let all flesh come to him as they
 did, and they shall be heard as they were. For ever a King,
 and so obliged to help his subjects: for ever a Potentate,
 and so able to do His good: and the granting our petitions
 is for his eternal glory and praise. Whereupon we may con-
 clude, that this mighty and everlasting Father can, and, for
 his own glory, will grant what shall be necessary and bene-
 ficial for us. Always he will hear and do, *Licet non ad volun-* 2 Cor. 12. 8, 9.
tatem, tamen ad salutem, though not always according to Psal. 34. 10.
 our wish, will and desire, yet as it shall promote our salva- Rom. 8. 32.
 tion.

Amen.

This word is *Signaculum orationis*, the seal of this, and all Hieron. Biblio-
 other prayers, in use among the *Jews*, and taken up by the theca patrum.
 Christian Church, and imposed upon the people in all her Tom. 4.
 Liturgies. And it signifies not only, *So be it*, but *So it is or*
shall be: and it shews the fervent desire, the full assurance,
 and the sweet Harmony and consent of the Petitioners, and
 continues their attention.

1. *So be it*, is Optative, and shews their desire, that they
 are sensible of Gods honour, and are touched with their
 wants, and therefore desire that God should have his due,
 and their own necessities be relieved; which, that it be not
 coldly and faintly done, our *Amen's* at the end of the prayer
 should be like that of the Primitive Christians, who found-
 ed *Amen* with that fervour, zeal, and heat, *Ut reboârit in-*
star fulminis, aut irati maris: He that heard the Eccho of
 their zealous tongues, might suppose he heard the voice Basil. Hieron.
 of the roaring Sea, or the mighty voice of a powerful
 Thunder.

2. *So it is, or shall be*; expresses our faith, our full as-
 surance and confidence, and reliance upon Gods promise.
Call upon me in the day of trouble, and I will hear thee. Hec Psal. 50. 15.
Scriptura est Indentura, this Scripture is Gods Indenture
 with man in trouble, and he will not break with us, ex- Deut. 7. 9.
 cept we break with him. Upon which promise, that we 1 Thes. 5. 24.
 Y
 rely,

relie, the sending up of *Amen* is our evidence. He that is *Amen*, i. e. True and Faithful, hath said it, and our *Amen*,

2 Tim. 2. 12. an assurance that he *a* truly and faithfully will perform it.

1 Pet. 4. 19.

3. This *Amen* is not to be said by one only, but by the whole people and Congregation, intimating the harmony, consent, unity, and unanimity of the Petitioners; that they send to God a common vote, and are all agreed with one heart and voice to petition him. And if he will lend his ear to two or three, the wrestling of a pious multitude will more prevail with him. He then that neglects it, or neglects to say *Amen* to the suit, deserves to have no share in the grant.

Mat. 18. 19, 20.

4. *Amen* being put in the close, should stay all wandering thoughts, all avocations and distractions: It may raise the attention, and keep the heart of the suppliant awake. Because he is to know, that he is yet to do somewhat, and to be attentive to what he is to set his Seal. With which, if he close not with the Priest, he may well doubt, that the Priests prayer will no way avail him.



THE FOURTH PART OF THE CATECHISM.

Viz. Of the Sacraments.

THat God by his Son did redeem the world, is taught in the Creed. In this part is taught how God by the Sacraments doth present, exhibit, and seal to us that Redemption.

1. *Quest.* How many Sacraments hath Christ ordained in his Church?

Antiw. Two only as generally *(Baptism, and the Supper of necessary to Salvation.)* the Lord.

1. For the number; they are but two, and two only. For howsoever the Church of *Rome* hath established more; yet the Ancients acknowledged no more, and Cardinal *Richelieu* confesseth it. 'Tis, saith he, a common received saying among us Catholicks, that all the Sacraments did flow out of the side of our Lord: but thence only issued water and blood; water as the matter of Baptism, and blood of the Eucharist; and thence concludes, that properly there are no more. *Joh. 19. 34.*

Sacramenta gemina. Aug. not Duo. Examen pacifique, cap. 1. pag. 22.

Most true it is, that if the word Sacrament be taken in a large sense for any holy Rite or Mystery, there may be many; but strictly and properly taken, the Church never acknowledged above two only.

a Mat. 28. 19. 1. *a* Baptism from βαπτίζω that signifies to wash, dip, dive, or sprinkle.

b Mat. 26. 21. 2. *b* The Lords Supper, because ordained by our Lord, at, or after Supper.

Now these two our Saviour only instituted, that the number of the Sacraments of the Gospel might correspond to the two of the Law, *c* Circumcision and the Paschever : *d* or rather because these two are sufficient. No man requires more in any Profession, than that he may be entred into it, and be consummate in it. To which ends these two will suffice.

e Acts 2. 38. 1. *e* By Baptism we have our admission and entrance into the Church ; it is the Laver of Regeneration, by it we are new-born : *nascimur*.

f 1 Cor. 10. 3. 2. *f* By the Lords Supper we are nourished, preserv'd, and grown up in Christ after we are re-born : *pascimur*. I see no

reason then why we should not content our selves with these two.

2. Generally necessary to Salvation.

That is, which all men ought to receive, who desire to *a* attain Salvation : Which is not so to be understood, as if God could not save without them ; But that they are the means instrumental, and ordinary seals, by which God hath promised to convey and assure Christs merits unto us, and commanded us this way to receive them : so that wilfully to neglect them, or to want them, when they may be had, is to cast aside Gods Ordinance.

That there is a necessity for a Christian to be obedient to Gods command, no man can deny : since then he hath commanded that we receive them, who dares say that they are not necessary ?

But this is not the sole necessity : if we shall reflect upon our own condition, there will be found other necessities in them.

b Gen. 17. 10. 1. *b* They serve as marks to separate those of Gods household from strangers.

2. They are bonds of obedience, strict obligations of mutual

a John 3. 5.
b 6. 53.
Perk. Order
 of the causes
 of salvation
 and damnati-
 on, cap. 32.
1 Cor. 10. 17.

tual charity, provocations to piety, preservatives against
d sin, memorials of the principal benefits of Christ.

3. They are visible marks by which God gives notice
e of his approach, and purposeth to impart the vital or sa-
ving grace of Christ to all that are capable thereof.

4. f They are conditional means, which God requires to
be observed of them unto whom he imparts grace. Which
grace a worthy receiver partakes of, not from any natural or
supernatural quality in the Sacrament, but from God him-
self, which is the Author of the Sacraments: It is received
from Him, and not from them.

I shall here make use of that excellent observation of ju-
dicious Mr. *Hooker*. This is the necessity of Sacraments: *Hooker Eccl.*
That saving grace, which Christ originally is, or hath for *pol. l. 5. p. 57.*
the general good of his whole Church, by Sacraments he
severally derives into every member thereof. Sacraments
serve as the instruments of God to that end and purpose:
Moral instruments, the use whereof is in our hands, the effect
is in his: For the use we have his expresse Commandment;
for the effect his conditional promise: so that without our
obedience to the one, there is of the other no apparent assu-
rance: As contrariwise where the signs and Sacraments of
his grace, are not either through contempt unreceived, or
not received with contempt, we are not to doubt, but that
they really give what they promise, and are what they sig-
nifie.

Quest. What meanest thou by the word Sacrament?

Ans. I mean an outward and visible sign, of an inward
and spiritual grace, ordained by Christ himself: As a means
whereby we receive the same. And a pledge to assure us thereof.

1. Of the word Sacrament.

This word Sacrament among the *Romans* was taken in
three senses:

1. *Pro litis pignore*, For an Engagement a man gave at
Law to answer the action.

2. For an Oath given by the Souldier to the General not
to desert him.

3. For

3. For a military note, or *pro Tessera militari*, by which they were distinguished.

Now from one of these, or all these, the word might be brought into the Church by an Analogy, for the Sacraments may be said to be,

1. *Pignora*, pawns and assurances on Gods part to us, to perform his Covenant, and bestow grace.

2. *Signa juratoria*, on our part : by which we bind our selves to keep our Covenant, vow, and word with God.

3. Or else *Tesserae* ; notes and marks by which we are separate from all other, who are not Christians.

2. A Sacrament is a *visible sign*, &c.

In this Answer every word is to be well weighed, since by it, we shall come to the true knowledge of a Sacrament, reflecting on the causes. We have here mention of,

1. The matter of a Sacrament, that whereof they outwardly consist, and the secret grace which is represented. For it is a *visible sign of an invisible grace*.

2. The essential form, consisting in that relation, which that sign hath to grace, or grace to that sign ; which generally ariseth, not out of the elements themselves, but from the institution. So it was *Ordained*.

3. The efficient cause, or who it was thus ordained them, it was Christ. *Ordained by Christ himself*.

4. The end or final cause. 1. To be a *means whereby we receive grace*. 2. To be a *pledge to assure us thereof*.

1. *Of the matter of the Sacrament, that which is Visible and Invisible.*

Lib. 4. cap. 34. It was long since said by *Irenaeus*, that the Eucharist did consist of two parts, the one earthly, the other heavenly : to which all posterity hath assented, with one voice testifying, that in the Sacrament there be Signs and Things.

A sign is that which presents it self to the sense, and somewhat else to the understanding : As the Rain-bow is

is a sign in Heaven presented to the eye, but another thing is thereby presented to the mind, viz. *Gods Covenant no more to destroy the earth by water.* The sign is outward and visible, not a man but sees that : The Covenant is invisible, and he only knows it, and believes it, who out of the Book of God is taught, why it was there set. For Naturally it is not such, but given and set in the clouds to be such. To apply this to the Sacraments.

Signs we have here, Bread, Wine, Water, which are outward and visible things, no eye but sees them.

But these are resemblances of higher things, to wit, of some special favour, spiritual grace and treasure, that is bestowed upon us by God. Which grace they naturally represent not, but were imposed and ordained by God to that purpose.

Which grace is no way discerned by the eye of man, and therefore we call it *Invisible* : But is represented, and by these signs sealed unto the soul, and therefore we call it *Spiritual*.

The grace it self, in one word is, The whole obedience, merit, death, and passion of our Saviour ; and the benefits that flow from thence, *Justification, Wisdom, Sanctification,* 1 Cor. 1. 30. *Redemption.*

1. His Justice, by which we are made righteous, forgiven, absolved.

2. His Wisdom, by which we are made wise to Salvation.

3. His Sanctification, for by the power of his Spirit, we die to sin, and live to righteousness.

4. Redemption, by which we are redeemed from sin, death, and hell, and shall be estate in glory, when the day of full Redemption shall come.

This grace is altogether inward, it is spiritual ; the soul only of him, that hath it sealed to him, is conscious to it : but outwardly and visibly it is conveyed unto him by these external elements, Symbols and signs, or Images.

2. Of the form of the Sacrament Ordained.

The form of the Sacrament consists in Relation, which is a mutual respect betwixt the sign and the things signified, such as is between the father and his son, the master and his scholar, the husband and the wife: For in these there is such a mutual union and reference of one to the other, that the one term being removed, the other is removed also: for she is no wife that hath not a husband, nor he no husband that hath not a wife; they stand and fall together. It is so in this case, take away the signs, and there will be no Sacrament; and take away the thing signified, though the outward signs be there, yet they represent and seal nothing.

The reason is, because both want that to which they relate. The Relation then is the mystical union and conjunction of these two, which is neither natural, nor local, nor yet corporal, but merely sacramental: Of which if you shall ask a reason, no other can be given, but because *Christ* hath *ordained* it should be so. For the Sacraments are that altogether, and nothing else, which God by the word of his divine institution doth testify he will have them to be. As therefore our union with Christ is wholly mystical, so also in the Sacrament the union of the things with the signs is altogether mystical and spiritual, and depends merely upon Christ the Ordainer's will and counsel.

Eph. 5. 32.

3. Of the efficient cause of the Sacrament Ordained by Christ.

The Author of the Sacrament is God alone, and that one Mediator betwixt God and man, Jesus Christ: the reason is evident, because he hath right only to institute a Sacrament, who can bestow those graces that are sealed to worthy receivers in the Sacrament, and can withhold them, and punish unworthy receivers. Which because it appertains to God alone; He and no other must be the ordainer

Mat. 26. 26. &
28. 19.

1 Cor. 11. 23.

ordainer of it. The old Rule is immoveable and true, *Nihil habere rationem Sacramenti extra usum à Deo institutum.* Nothing can be accounted for a Sacrament beyond the use ordained by God.

1. As a means whereby we receive the same Grace.

2. As a pledge to assure us thereof.

4. The end of the Sacrament.

The Sacraments {

1. Represent.

2. Exhibit.

3. Seal.

1 Cor. 11. 24.

25, 26.

1. They represent, and set before our eyes under corporal and visible elements, what Christ hath done for us. For example, the bread broken, Christs body crucified; and the wine poured out, his blood shed for us. And in this respect they are called Signs and Monuments of his love: Signs of Heavenly things.

2. But this is not all, for they exhibit also: In them, that grace is truly given, which by the Signs is represented. All indeed receive not the grace of God, that receive the Sacrament of Grace. But by them grace is offered to all the Church, though exhibited only to the faithful: For upon the performance of this order, he actually makes over, and conveys so much grace and favour unto us, as at that time is useful for us: such is, *a* Pardon of sin, Reconciliation to, *a* Luc. 22. 19. and acceptance of our Persons, strength to do what he requires; Of all which, the Sacrament is a means. *Canalis gratie*, The Conduit-pipe of Grace. Tit. 3. 5.

3. They are pledges to assure us of this Grace.] For the Sacrament is as it were a pawn left us by God in the hand of the Minister, to give us acquiescence, and ground of confidence, that the graces promised shall be surely performed. Of which that we doubt the less, it is called a *b* Seal. For *b* Rom. 4. 11. God, not content with the General offer of his *c* Promises, Gen. 17. 11. out of his meer mercy, hath thought fit to seal them to every particular Believer, having a regard thereby to their infirmity. *c* Gen. 12. 3.

In an Indenture we have the Conditions agreed upon betwixt both parties, set forth and represented, after sealed

led and delivered. A Covenant God hath made with man for Salvation and for Grace ; without which, Salvation cannot be had : and by the Sacrament it hath pleased him, as in a fair Deed to represent it, to convey and make it over, to seal and deliver it unto us.

But this representation, and exhibition of that grace here signified, must not be referred to the eye of the body, but to the soul of the Believer ; since it is spiritual. And spiritual we call it for two reasons ;

1. First, because of the Author, the Holy Spirit ; that, by a secret and wonderful operation brings to pass, that the virtue of the blood and merit of Christ, by the intervening of the flesh, sacramentally communicated to us, should pierce even to our souls.

2. Secondly, because Faith, the instrument by which we receive the Seal of the Covenant, is a gift of the Spirit, which, by apprehending and applying, unites the signs, and the things signified, which in their own nature are far dissonant.

Quest. How many parts be there of the Sacrament ?

Ans. *Two : the outward and visible sign, and the inward spiritual Grace.* This answer may be understood partly by what hath been said, and partly by what shall be said hereafter. Of Baptism.

Quest. What is the outward visible sign or form in Baptism ?

Ans. 1. *Water.*

2. *Wherein the person Baptized is dipt or sprinkled with it.*

3. *In the Name of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.*

Three things are here to be considered in this Answer.

- | | |
|------------------|----------------------------------|
| { | 1. The manner of Baptism ; |
| | <i>Water.</i> |
| | 2. The Ceremony ; <i>Dipping</i> |
| | <i>or Sprinkling.</i> |
| { | 3. The Form ; <i>In the Name</i> |
| | <i>of the Father, &c.</i> |
| 1. <i>Water.</i> | |

Baptism

a Baptism is the door by which all enter into the visible Church, and is therefore administered to beginners in Christianity, who are to be initiated by *Water*. For in that element only the baptized person is to be washed. The Scriptures and practice for this, are so evident, that it cannot be gain said.

b The end is, to wash away sin. Now in sin there be these two, *Reatus & Macula*: The guilt and the soyl or spot. *c* The guilt, to which punishment is due: The spot, by which we grow *d* loathsom in the eyes of God.

The Scruple then here is, How water can wash away these spots of sin? To clear it in brief: The truth is, it could not; it is no water-work, no, not if you put to it Nitre, much *e* sope, Fullers-earth, or the herb Borith; all *e Jer. 2. 22.* will not do, the soyl will not off so. *f* Blood must be put to *f Heb. 9. 22.* it. The blood of the Son of God, of which this water is but *12. 14.* an *outward sign*: and that alone hath an efficacy to purge from sin and *g* uncleanness. This blood is *λυτρων*, a ransom *g Mat. 20. 28.* and price sufficient to remove the guilt and punishment, and *1 Tim. 2. 6.* it is *λυτρων*, a *b* Laver to wash away the soyl and spot. *b Tit. 3. 5.* *Zach. 1. 12, 13.*

2. *Wherein the person Baptized is dipt, or sprinkled with it.* Vide Cypr. epist. 76. ad Magnum.

The Ceremony here used, is $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Dipping, or} \\ \text{Sprinkling.} \end{array} \right.$

Our Church then makes the action indifferent, whether it be *Immersio*, or *Apersio*, dipping or sprinkling is left to discretion : for neither are essential to a Baptism, but belong to the Ceremony of it, and therefore are to be regulated by charity.

1. *b* Diving or dipping best represents our burial to sin *b* Rom. 6.3,4; and rising to a new life, and was at first in use in warmer Col. 2. 12,13. Countries, when the greatest part who were baptized, were *adulti* or grown in years.

2. But when the Gospel was spread into colder Regions, *sprinkling* instead of *dipping* was thought sufficient; to which that place of the *Hebrews*, 12. 24. gives countenance, where mention is made of the *blood of Christ*, and

Heb. 9. 21.

the blood of sprinkling, and again, 1 Pet. 1. 2. *Sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ*. And indeed I see no reason, that as in the other Sacrament, a spoonful of wine is as significative as a greater quantity, so here a handful of water should not be as significative as a whole river.

Acts 10. 47.

Farther, this custom of *Sprinkling* is of great antiquity in the Church, as appears by the 76. Epistle of *Cyprian*, the later part of which is written in the defence of it. *Tertul.* also *de panit. cap. 6.* speaking of Baptism, calls it, *aquæ unam asperginem*, the one sprinkling of water. And *Gregory* the first acknowledgeth that it was in use in the Western Church. There are who conceive probably that the Apostles themselves used sprinkling, as well as dipping, since we read of some baptized by them in houses as well as rivers.

3. *In the Name of the Father, and the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.*

Mat. 28. 18.

This is the form of Baptism : and it never was, nor never may be omitted. For, should these words be left out, the Baptism is Null. It was the pleasure of our Saviour, that these words should be retained for these reasons.

1. That we may know, that what the Minister doth, he doth not of, or from himself, or of his own head, but by Commission, Command, and good Authority, even by the Authority of the whole Trinity. And therefore what he doth, is of the same validity, as if God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost should baptize. Since it is in their name, their power, their authority.

2. For the comfort and assurance of those who are baptized, that the whole Trinity do ratifie and confirm, what is promised and sealed in Baptism, to wit, remission of sin, and acceptance to favour.

3. This lays an obligation upon the baptized person, and that divers ways.

1. To acknowledge these three Persons, and consequently his whole Creed : to believe in God the Father that made him, God the Son that redeemed

deemed him, and God the Holy Ghost, that sanctified him, and all the elect people of God.

2. As he acknowledges these three, so also to deliver himself to be taught by these three, and no other in the Mysteries of his Religion. This *S. Paul* intimates, when he asks the *Corinthians*, In whose Name were you baptized. *What? were you baptized in the Name of Paul?* as much as to say, You ought to be his Scholars, in whose Name you received your Baptism, and to whom then you bound your selves: Which being not the name of *Paul* nor *Cephas*, but the Trinity, you ought to receive that alone for infallible truth, which is taught you by the Trinity, and not to pin your faith upon the opinions of men.
3. To be an obedient servant, to invoke, to give honour to these three Persons, and to live by their rules and directions, to be a hearer, and a willing doer of their Commands.

Upon which conditions being by Baptism admitted into the Church, he hath assured to him, what grace, God hath by Covenant promised.

Quest. What is the inward and spiritual grace [in Baptism?]

Ans. *A death unto sin, and a New birth unto righteousness. For, being by Nature born in Sin, we are hereby made the Children of Grace.*

1. In the Question, the word *Grace* signifies a special favour, made over to the baptized in the Sacrament. And this is called,

2. *Spiritual*, as chiefly belonging to the soul of man, his immortal Spirit.

3. And *inward*, that howsoever the Symbols by which this grace is represented be the object of the sense; yet the grace it self is not seen, but inwardly conceived and received by the baptized.

In the Answer, we are to consider,

1. What this Grace is.

2. The

2. The reason why it is necessary.
3. The benefit we receive by it.

1. *A death unto sin. 2. And a new birth unto righteousness.*

Joh. 3. 5.

Except, saith our Saviour to Nicodemus, a man be born again of water and the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God, out of which the wisest Divines (in respect of Gods Ordinance) have collected the necessity of Baptism, which is not only a Laver, but the Laver of our Regeneration; as I may so say, the midwife that brings us to this *New birth*.

Tit. 3. 5.

a Ephes. 2. 1.

b Colos. 2. 13.

Rom. 6. 16.

Rom. 7. 14, 23.

1 Pet. 2. 24.

c Col. 3. 5.

d Ephes. 2. 1.

Rom. 7. 6.

a In our first birth we were dead in sin, in our second b birth dead to sin; in our first, alive to our own lusts and affections; in this second, quick and lively to righteous actions. In a word, of slaves of sin and death, made free-men and servants of life and righteousness. And these two acts of our regeneration, move betwixt two terms, from one to another, from Death to Life. The first of which is c mortification, which is the weakning, the deadening, the putting off sin, and the slavish drudgeries, and imperious commands of sin, from our mortal body: The other is d vivification, which is the performance of those actions of living men, that are quickened by the spirit, serving God all our days in righteousness and holiness.

And the ancient manner in Baptism, the putting the person baptized under water, and then taking him out again; did well set forth these two acts, the first his dying, the second his rising again.

1. That which is here taught, is the doctrine of S. Paul, Col. 2. 12. *Ye are buried together with Christ in baptism, in whom also ye have risen, &c.* Into the grave with Christ we went not; for our bodies were not, could not be buried with his; but in our baptism by a kind of *Analogie* or resemblance, while our bodies are under the water, we may be said to be buried with him, and all that dwells in, and adheres to, our mortal bodies; that is, the whole body of sin is then buried, when the power thereof is weakned, repressed, and as a dead carcass covered with earth, removed

Rom. 6. 6.

moved out of our sight, so bound with grave-cloaths, it cannot stir, and carry a man whither it please; to act, what, as a Tyrant, it commands, This is it, with which *S. Paul* presseth the *Romans*, cap. 6. 3. *As many of you as were baptized into Christ, were baptized into his death.* This is the first part of the grace received in Baptism.

2. The second is a *New birth to righteousness*, which the Apostle also in this place to the *Colossians* puts us in mind of, when he adds, *ye are also risen with him*: as the baptized did *emerge*, or arise, out of the water. And under this term of Resurrection, he sets forth that *New life*, which those who are new-born begin to live.

And New it may be well called, because it proceeds from a new principle, and hath new effects. As every thing is in *essendo* Being, so it is in *operando* Operation. As is the cause, such must the effect be: for, *do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?* The principle is here good, and therefore what flows from it must be good also. That principle that moves the Christian is not the will of the flesh, or his corrupt heart, but the Spirit of Christ, and sanctifying grace, that works in the heart. The author of this life is not nature, but grace, and therefore the fruits are new and gracious; not the old works of the flesh, adultery, contention, envy, murder, drunkenness, heresies, &c. But charity, joy, peace, goodness, faith, &c. *Gal. 5. 19.*

These two are always knit and joyned together. For as Christ remained not under the power of death, but rose from thence, so by the virtue of his death, and resurrection, we do not only dye unto sin, but we also arise, that we may live to righteousness, *1 Pet. 2. 24.* Which self-same is said by *S. Paul, Rom. 6. 5.* If being planted with him, we have grown up into the similitude of his death, we shall grow up also in the similitude of his resurrection. But observe that it is in him, or with him, that we know from what fountain this mortification and vivification flows. From our selves it is not, which the Catechism minds us of, *Eph. 2. 5, 6.*

2. For being by Nature born in sin.

Pfal. 51. 5.
Ezek. 16. 1,
&c.

Rom. 7. 5, 8.
18. 23.

That is, conceived in sin, and born in iniquity, polluted no less in sin from the womb, than an infant in his mothers blood; we can have no principle in our selves, or from our selves to move us, to put sin to death, or give life to righteous actions, rather the clean contrary, because we are born with strong inclinations, and propensions, which would certainly engage us in a course of sin: in our Baptism it is that this strength is given us by Christ, that will enable us to get out of that servile and dangerous estate. So it follows,

3. We are hereby made the Children of Grace.

2 Cor. 3. 6.
& 1. 12, 13.
Ephes. 2. 22.

Children of grace, and therefore enabled to do the works of grace. Which work flows not immediately from the Sacrament, but from the power of Christ, and his Spirit that works by the Sacrament. The rule of the School is found, and to be retained, That *Sacramenta ex similitudine representant, ex institutione significant; sed ex virtute Christi sanctificant*. Sacraments by resemblance represent, by institution signify; but by the power of Christ they sanctify. *Solus Spiritus rem Sacramenti nobis confert*, Cypr. de Bapt. It is the Spirit alone that gives the thing, the grace here mentioned, to dye to sin, and live to righteousness. Where note, that

Dr. Hammond
præf. Cat. scilicet.
2. p. 260.

1. That this death, and new birth, is not the resolution to forsake sin, and live a godly life, for this is supposed before Baptism, and that which makes a man capable of it, as the question evidently sheweth.

Eph. 4. 13.

2. Neither is it an actual forsaking of sin, nor leading a new life, for that is a consequent of Baptism, and must be done all the life after; till a man become a perfect man in Christ Jesus.

3. But this grace given in Baptism, is a supernatural ability to dye to sin, and live to righteousness, to empower us to make larger progresses in Christianity: which, though it will never absolutely be perfect in this life, yet
it

it may enable us to perform such sincere obedience, that God will accept, pardoning all the faults, and failings; and bound we are to improve this grace, and to co-operate with *Phil. 2. 12, 13.* it all our days.

Quest. What is required of persons to be baptized?

Ans. 1. *Repentance, whereby they forsake sin.* And

2. *Faith, whereby they stedfastly believe the promises of God, made to them in that Sacrament.*

These two are the qualifications that are requisite in those who are baptized; and so much the questions there proposed do evince: One whereof is about our forsaking the devil, world and flesh, which is an act of repentance. The other about our believing the Articles of the Creed, *Acts 10. 4.* which is an act of Faith. *Joh. 3. 10.*

1. *Repentance* is a necessary condition in all that ask Baptism for themselves, it being the *removens prohibens*, that which removes what should hinder the grace we expect in Baptism: for though it merit no favour, yet it disposeth the man, and makes him capable of mercy.

Neither can we find any man of age admitted to Baptism without the profession of it. *John the Baptists* Sermon was, *Mat. 3. 6.* to all that came to *Jordan*, *Repent*; and those that were baptized by him confessed their sins: And *S. Mark* cap. 1. 4. says plainly, that *He preached the Baptism of repentance.* And to this *S. Peter* exhorts the *Jews*, *Acts. 2. 28. Repent and be baptized every one of you, &c.*

And what kind of Repentance is requisite, the word in the Greek Text imports, for it is *μετανοια*, change your *Ezek. 18. 31.* minds; a *Transmutation* is necessary, not only a *Transmutation*; for till the mind be changed, the life will never be changed as it ought to be. *32.*

But upon this change within, the change without will certainly follow: our good notions, and our good motions *Mat. 3. 8.* inwardly, *will bring forth fruits worthy of repentance* outwardly: of which the chief is here reckoned, which is,

1. *That we forsake sin.*

Not only that we be toucht with the sense of it, grieve

A a

for

Joel 2. 12, 13. for it, confess it, or resolve against it : But that really, sin-
 Prov. 28. 13. cerely, actually, we shake hands with it, and forsake it : so
 Heb. 12. 1. that, though weakly, we fall into it, yet wilfully we will
 Heb. 10. 26. not commit it, nor obstinately continue in it ; it shall never
 Rom. 6. 12. reign in our mortal bodies.

2. Faith, that they stedfastly believe the promises of God
 made to them in this Sacrament.

Mark 16. 16. The other qualification is Faith, and this is necessary, be-
 Heb. 11. 1. cause the promises of God have not the effect upon us, till
 August. 9. 59. they are accepted by us, and it is faith only that can apply
 ex N. T. them : and therefore it is necessary, Col. 2. 12. *Qui Baptis-*
mus putat carnali ratione consistere, hic non est spiritualis ; nec
donum celeste potest consequi, qui se per aquam, non per fidem,
commutari credit.

1. And the reason is firm and evident : Because Christ is
 the Substance of the Sacraments, the virtue and life of them
 is from Christ : But Christ is not received nor laid hold on
 by an Infidel. Such men, *Quod corde sicci sunt & mente aridi,*
labuntur quidem illi petram, sed inde nec mel fugunt, aut oleum.
 Cyprian.

2 Cor. 7. 1. 2. The object of this faith is particularly the promises of
 God made in this Sacrament, which are, Pardon for sin,
 and strength against sin ; which being promised upon the
 former condition of repentance, no man can with a good
 conscience lay hold of those promises, but he that is a true
 penitent.

3. They are to be believed stedfastly, and there is all
 the reason in the world for it, because they are the promi-
 ses of God : He is immutable, *in him there is no shadow of*
 Heb. 10. 23. *change* : He is All-sufficient, Omnipotent, *able to make*
 Heb. 6. 17, 18, *good what he hath promised* : To stagger then in the pro-
 19. mises, is in effect, to make him a mutable God, a God that
 can repent, and will not keep his word, or else an impo-
 tent God, one unable to make good what he hath spoken.
 Numb. 23. 19. No, no ; *Hath he said, and will he not do it ?* Yes certainly,
 If we fail not on our part, Christ will not fail on his : If
 we do repent and believe the Gospel, no power of Hea-
 ven,

ven, on earth, in hell, or malice of Satan shall ever be able to deprive us of our part of the promises made to us in this Sacrament. Only remember this, that Christ, that hath made a promise of grace to a penitent Believer, hath made no promise at all to an impenitent Infidel.

4. I adde this in the close, That Baptism is of special use through a Christians whole life. It is but once administered ; but the vertue and efficacy thereof grows not old by time.

1. In all thy fears and doubts, look to thy Baptism, and the promises of God, then sealed to thee. Lay hold on them by faith, and thou mayst have actual comfort.
2. In thy failings, slips and revolts, to recover the sooner, look back to thy Baptism. New Baptism shall not need : the Covenant and Seal of God stands firm, and changeth not.
3. Renew thy Repentance, Renew thy Faith in those blessed promises of grace, sealed and secured in Baptism, and then expect all good from Gods free mercies in Christ, although thy performances fall very short ; though thou art an unprofitable servant.

Quest. Why then are children baptized, when by reason of their tender age, they cannot perform them ? that is, Repent and Believe.

Ans. Yes : they do perform them by their Sureties, who promise and vow them both, in their names : Which when they come to age, themselves are bound to perform.

This is an excellent Answer, and being well examined, will prove satisfactory. For it shews

1. How children perform this promise for Faith and Repentance.
2. That they are bound to perform the promise when they come to age, if they mean to have a part of the grace promised by God in Baptism.

1. For the first, Children perform not this promise in Baptism at that time Actually, that is, they do not then

Gen. 17. 9.

actually repent and believe ; neither is it necessary they should. For Baptism, is not the Covenant, but the Seal of it, and the Seal may be set, where these are wanting. This is evident in the case of Circumcision. With *Abraham* God established the Covenant, and the Seal was to be set in the flesh of his child, and those children, that come of his loyns, at eight days old ; to whom no man can attribute Faith and Repentance. And why any man should tye children, that enter now into the same Covenant, and are to be saved upon the same grounds, to harder conditions than those Infants were then bound, seems to me very unreasonable and uncharitable. If want of faith and repentance could render the children of Christians incapable of Baptism ; out of question, the same defects would have rendered the seed of *Abraham*, before they came to age, incapable of Circumcision : But this it did not them ; therefore neither these.

Deut. 29. 11.

Vers. 12.

Neither ought it seem so strange to any man, that one should engage for another, a man for a child, since we see it done in civil contracts. Mortgages, bonds, espousals, are taken and made in the names of children, of which they are as utterly ignorant, as what at Baptism is for them undertaken. Thus much will be confessed : But can it be thus in Church-covenants ? Can the father, or any other be engaged for the son ? And will such an engagement be accepted of God ? Yes, it may be done, and will be accepted. This is evident out of the Scripture : *Moses* did engage the little ones, as well as their fathers, to keep the words of the Covenant (for so it is called four times in that Chapter) telling them, that *He called them together, little ones and all, to enter into Covenant with the Lord their God, and into his oath.* And thus concludes the Chapter, *The secret things belong to the Lord our God ; but those things which are revealed, belong to us, and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this Law.* As if *Moses* had said, The rise and ground of this is a secret, and unsearchable ; no reason of it can be given, but Gods will and love. It pleased him to have it so. But that he would so have it, it is revealed, and

and it belongs to us, and our children, and is a standing Law to be observed by us, and our children for ever : of which, yet, this reason is rendred at the 18. vers. *Left there should be among you any man, woman, or family, or tribe, whose heart turneth away this day from the Lord our God, to go and serve the gods of the Nations, lest there should be among you a root that beareth gall or wormwood.* A root, to which nothing more like than a child : the child then, sure, was that root to be engaged by Covenant, lest that bitter fruit be brought forth.

At *Jehosaphats* Fast, there was present all *Judah*, with *their little ones, their wives, and their children.* Why the little ones? The children certainly, many of them at least, knew not what belonged to the Fast, nor the Fear they were in from the Nations. But all the promises that God had made, belonged to them, as well as their fathers; and of these their fathers put God in mind, and brought their children with them to joyn with them in the petition, and pressing the promise (though they actually knew not what it meant) that God might be more powerfully moved.

2 Chron. 26.
13.

Vers. 7.

What should I say, that the light of nature taught the *Ninevites* this truth? for in their repentance, not the greatest only, but the least were engaged to repent and fast, and cry mightily to God. Alas, those *Innocents*, that *knew not their right hand from their left*; knew not what was done, nor why it was done, and yet the injunction was laid upon them. And who can tell, whether God were not moved more for their sakes than their parents? Sure I am that God useth this as a motive of his mercy to *Nineveh*, *Thou hadst pity on the gourd, &c. and should not I spare Nineveh, that great City, wherein are more than twelve thousand persons, that cannot discern their right hand from the left.*

Jonah 3. 9.
Jonah 4. 10,
11.

All that hath been said hitherto, tends only to this end, that it is no absurdity to affirm, that the little ones are part of the number of those that entred into Covenant with God, and so may enter into this Covenant made in Christ, by the parity of reason. Then again, to shew, that a father may

may undertake a religious duty for his child, though the child understands nothing of it, with which undertaking yet God is pleased; and farther, I press not these instances.

But what now, if I shall make it appear, that there is a command for the Baptism of Infants? To my understanding there is great light given to it out of that Commission our Saviour gave to his Disciples: *Προσθίετε* Mat. 28. 19. *μαθητάς πάντα τὰ ἔθνη βαπτίζετε αὐτοίς*, &c. Before I hence make my inference, I shall propose, *quædam postulata*, certain Propositions, so reasonable, that I conceive they will not be denied.

1. That the Apostles by these words receive a Commission for the promulgation of the Gospel, and a Command to execute it.

2. That all Nations stand here in opposition to the *Jews*: For the Commission, Mat. 10. 5, 6. was particular to seek the lost sheep of the house of *Israel*, and an express prohibition in it, that they go not into the way of the *Gentiles*, &c. But now their Commission is enlarged, and become *æcumenical*. Mark 16. 15. *Go and disciple all Nations*: Preach the Gospel to every creature.

3. That a Nation is a Society of men, which comprehends under it *Singula generum*, without distinction of sex, condition, age. And this is evident: for a child as soon as born, is a free Denison. His birth makes him capable of all the privileges of that Nation.

4. That all Nations here must be of the same extent, as that Nation to which it is opposed, *viz.* the *Jews*. But all *Jews*, *Singula generum*, of what sex, condition, age soever, were within the Covenant, and therefore all Nations in the same manner were within the Covenant. S. Paul so argues: The *Gentile* is engrafted as the *Jew*; but the *Jew* was engrafted with his children, and consequently the *Gentile*. Rom. 11. 15, 16, 17.

5. That this word *μαθητάς*, rarely occurs in any *Classique* Heathen Author, if at all, and therefore must be taken in a Church-sense.

6. That

6. That this word in propriety of language, signifies, not to teach, but to make a disciple, or bring under Church-discipline, or in a capacity to be taught, making this form of Baptism their Ceremony of receiving them.

7. Lastly, that it is not so apt to render it *Teach* in this place, because that duty is enjoined in the following words. The sense then will run far easier thus, Go, and enter into your School all Nations by Baptism; and all that are so brought and received, instruct and institute them in the Christian Faith. Which interpretation may be justified by that parallel place, *Joh. 4. 1. The Pharisees heard that Jesus made more disciples and baptized, than John*: Where, to make disciples, and baptize is all one with the phrase here *μαθητεύετε βαπτίζετε*, and presupposeth not any precedent instruction, but rather as a subsequent.

Let then this Commission to the Apostles have its full extent, let *πάντα ἔθνη*, all Nations take in, as it usually doth, all of every Nation: and must (for otherwise the opposition will be lame and imperfect) Men and children among the *Gentiles*, as it did men and children among the *Jews*. Interpret *μαθητεύετε* in his proper and genuine signification, which is to disciple, or enter into a School to be taught (which also best agrees with the scope of the Text) when the Scholar so admitted shall be capable of teaching, and then the sense of the Commission will be this: Go forth, and make not the *Jews* only, as by virtue of the former Commission, your disciples; but the *Gentiles*, and their families, your disciples also; and upon their concession baptize them, and teach them to keep whatsoever I have commanded.

And that this was the Apostles sense of Christs words and opinion of his institution, will appear two manner of ways.

1. First, by one considerable remain or footstep of it in *S. Pauls* Epistle to the *Corinthians*, 1 Cor. 7. 14. *Else were your children unclean, but now they are holy*; which word, being not possible to be understood in that place of inherent holiness, must be understood of relative, that is, *holy*, as they

A8. 10. 14.

they stand in relation to their admission into the Church by Baptism. 2. Then again *αἰδῶμεθα*, *unclean*, is in *S. Peters* sense, such who might not be received into the Church; and then *ἁγία*, *holy*, which is such as are opposed to it, must necessarily signifie those children who may be admitted. 3. Lastly, were not this the importance of that place, there were no priviledge imaginable, no Sanctity which could be attributed to the Infants of Christians, which could not belong to the Infants of Heathens also; which yet is affirmed of the one, and denied of the other, by the Apostle.

Just. Martyr.
Irenæus, Tert.
Hyginus, Ori-
gen. Dionys. A-
reop.

Cyprian.
Clem. Rom.

De Baptismo
cont. Donatist,
l. 4. c. 24.

2. The perpetual and uninterrupted practice of the primitive Church, even from the Apostles time; To which the most ancient Fathers give an ample Testimony, whose evidence because it is fully set down by that walking Library *D. Hammond* in his Tract of Baptizing of Infants, & Sect. 39, ad 57. I will therefore spare the transcription. In brief only, One delivers, that Infants are thought worthy of Baptism; Another, that they are born again to God: A third, that they are Candidates of Sanctity, and holy by the prerogative of their birth: A fourth, appointed God-fathers: A fifth, that according to the custom of the Church, Baptism is given to Infants, and affirms it to be an Apostolical Tradition; so doth another: A sixth commands, Baptize your little ones: A seventh, As to the case of Infants which thou saidst were not to be baptized—it was far otherwise determined by all in our Council; we all judged, that the mercy and grace of God was to be denied to none, that was born of men.

And he concludes with *Augustines* testimony, which is full and very observable, *Nemo nobis susurrat*, &c. Let no man whisper to us other Doctrines. This the Church hath always had, always retained; this it hath received from the faith of the Predecessours; this it keeps perseveringly to the end: and upon it delivers that known rule, *Quod universa tenet Ecclesia, nec Concilium institutum, sed semper retentum est, non nisi auctoritate Apostolica traditum rectissime creditur*, That which the universal Church maintains, and was

was not instituted by Councils, but always continued, is most rightly believed to be delivered by the Apostles authority.

3. And methinks this is highly consonant to reason : for were it otherwise, the Apostles Commission would be shorter under the Gospel, than the Command for Circumcision under the Law. That would be for the whole Nation, children, and all : This to part of Nations, and so all should not be all. The promise made to the *Jew and his seed* so soon as born ; The promise made to the *Gentile and his seed*, after he is at age : A *Jewish child*, made a Covenanter whether he actually believe or no : a *Christian* cast aside till he can make it appear, that he believes and repents. It behoves them to shew some disparity in the infant Jew, and the infant Christian, lest they fasten upon the Almighty, in the reception to the same Covenant, *προσπολιτίαν* respect of persons, which I know they dare not. And this would be thought on also, what a discouragement this had been to the Jew to turn Christian, if with the Father, the Child should not have been admitted to the Covenant, and have a right to the Seal, which in his Judaism he had, and so the Child be in worse case under *Christ*, than he was under *Moses*.

Be it that we find no mention in Scripture of any child baptized, can any man thence rationally conclude, that none was ? How many matters of fact were done by the Apostles, of which those sacred Oracles are wholly silent ? Who ever read in Scripture that any woman ever received the Eucharist ? and yet he would be thought a man of a short discourse, who would thence collect, that none of the female sex were in the Apostles days admitted to the Lords Supper.

But the Answer that will fully satisfy this scruple, is this, Though an argument, drawn negatively from Scripture in *Credendis*, in things to be believed as Articles necessary to salvation, is of great force: yet in *Agendis*, in many things to be done by Christians (as among other this one of Baptizing Infants) it is very weak. This may not be be-

lieved, because not written, is true; and of great strength : This may not be done, because it is not written, that ever it was done ; is very fallacious, and concludes not.

To knit up all, Those who are of years are bound to make a profession of their Faith, and Repentance ; to be taught the truth of this mystery, and not to be admitted to Baptism without it ; for being of age, and of their own choice and desire to be made members of a Church, good reason it is they should oblige themselves to the conditions made known unto them. But for those who desire it not, nor can desire it through an unavoidable deficiency, yet have a right to it, because they are the *children of believing parents*, (for, if the root be holy, so are the branches, and again, your children are holy) charity requires that others desire it for them. These have been taught, and known on what conditions they are to be entred. These know that Christ commanded little Children to be brought unto him. These know that He laid his hands upon them, and blessed them, and therefore they earnestly believe that he will embrace them in the arms of his mercy, and give unto them everlasting life : and therefore in this faith and confidence they engage for them *.

ROM. 11. 16.

1 COR. 7. 14.

* Ἀξιοῦνται
δὲ τῶν διὰ
βαπτίσματος
τῶ ἀγαθῶν
τὰ βέβαιον, ὅτι
πιστὶς τῶν
προσέχον-
των αὐτὰ πρὸς
βαπτίσματος.
9. 56.

Justin. Martyr.
resp. ad Orthod.

Children are
allowed to en-
joy the good
things that
come by Ba-
ptism, by the
faith of those
who bring
them to Ba-
ptism.

a Mat. 8. 3.

b Mat. 2. 5.

c Mat. 15. 28.

d Mar. 10. 14.

Yea, but will the faith of the Surety, any way benefit the infant ? Yes it may, so far as it is intended : that is, to make the infant by Baptism to be received into the Congregation of Christs flock, and to give him a right to the Promises of the Covenant. Did not the faith of the *Centurion*, a that came to Christ for his servant, effect a cure upon the sick man ? Did not the faith of those, that let down b the bedrid-man through the tiles, move our Saviour to c cure him ? Did not the faith of the woman of *Canaan*, that came to our Saviour for her little Daughter, work compassion in him, and out of compassion, to heal her ? Say then no more, but the faith and charity of one may be powerful with God for another ; especially when we are encouraged to it, as in this case we are, by his own words, d *Suffer little Children to come unto me, for of such is the kingdom of God.* In the Faith of the Church grounded upon Gods

Gods Covenant the child is presented, and no sober man can doubt, but it will be accepted by him.

In which, because they, and those who contract for them, are by interpretation but as one person, the conditions agreed upon bind them no less, than if it had been their own act, if they mean to have any benefit by the contract or engagement : Which is the next point.

2. *They are bound to perform the vow and promise when they come to age.*

Repentance is a firm resolution of amendment of life; Faith an apprehension of Gods promises : For the performance of which the Sureties engage ; but not absolutely that the child shall do it, for that is beyond their power to undertake : But conditionally , that he shall do it, or else have no benefit by their Engagement.

When he comes to age then, or years of discretion, he is to be put in mind, what a solemn vow, promise, and profession his Sureties have made to God for him, and then he is put to his choice, whether he will stand to them, or reject them : no otherwise than those, who are married being children, have a choice when they come to years, whether that contract made by their friends, or parents shall bind them ; stand a ratified marriage or no.

1. If they will disclaim, and renounce, they may : But withal then they must know, that they disclaim and renounce all right, title, claim, or interest in the Promises of Christ, they cast him off, tread his blood under foot as an unholy thing, must not expect any strength from Christ against temptations, and so are left in the power of all sin, and villany : In a word, they renounce a pardon of sin, and the claim they might have to an inheritance in heaven.

2. But if they give their consent, and allow of what their Sureties did undertake (which is supposed) then they stand obliged and bound actually to repent, and believe, to obey Gods Commandments, and lead a Christian life in righteousness and holiness. For he that doth other-

wife breaks his vow, perjures himself, forfeits his pardon, makes his prayers and whole service of no acceptance, is a vassal and a slave to his own corruptions, being destitute and deprived of that strength by which he should strive against them, and conquer them.

All which sad considerations, I doubt not, will so far work upon a man, who hath the use of reason, that, as he cannot chuse but confess it a great Act of charity in his friends, so early to engage for him in so beneficial an Indenture: so also, to acknowledge that he is bound to stand to their engagement, and to observe the conditions of it through his whole life.

Of the Sacrament of the Lords Supper, or the Eucharist.

Quest. Why was the Sacrament of the Lords Supper ordained?

Luk. 22. 19.
2 Cor. 11. 24.

Ans. For the continual remembrance of the Sacrifice of the death of Christ, and the benefits we receive thereby.

In which answer we have these Conclusions.

1. That Christ died for our sins.
2. That this his death was a Sacrifice.
3. That this Sacrament was ordained for a continual Commemoration,

1. Of the death of Christ.
2. Of the benefits we receive thereby.

1. That Christ died for our sins.

This proposition is the constant assertion of the Scriptures, and needs no further proof, *Isa. 53. Who his own self bare our sins in his body on the tree*, 1 Pet. 2. 24. With infinite other places. Sin is either committed as by Adam, and the Angels that fell; or inherited, as by us, and all Adams posterity; or assumed, as by Christ: and this way only he was made sin for us: Not that he committed any sin, for he was that *just one*; nor that he inherited or contracted any, for he was conceived of the Holy Ghost; but pleased he was

a Act. 3. 14.
b Luk. 1. 35.

c to

e to stand in the place of sinners, and to take upon him the iniquity of us all, that so the justice of God might take its course and proceed against him for us. Which justice because it could not be satisfied without blood; *for without shedding of blood there is no remission*: he was willing to *d* *humble himself to death, even the death of the Cross for us.* *c* Isa. 53. 6. *d* Heb. 9. 22. *e* Phil. 2. 8.

2. *That this his death was a Sacrifice.*

And this death must be a *Sacrifice*, He made his Soul a *Sacrifice for sin*: and this was typed out by the old legal Sacrifices. These were of two sorts, either *ευχαριστικά*, of praise or thanksgiving, of which I speak not now: or else *ἱλαστικά*, or *b* propitiatory, or pacification, and such was this of our *c* Saviour, a *propitiation for our sins*. A sacrifice of a sweet *d* *smelling savour to God.* *a* Heb. 9. 16. *b* Isa. 53. 10. *c* Lev. 7. 11, 12. *d* 1 Joh. 2. 2. *e* Eph. 5. 2.

All the world lay under the curse, *Gen. 3. 17*. All the goods of the world were not able to free man from the Curse, Gold could not do it, nor the blood of beasts. *Gen. 2. 17. c* Heb. 10. Not *ten thousand rivers of oyl*: as for man, the Lord of these, his hand was too weak too: *for no man could redeem his brother from death, nor make agreement to God for him.* *f* *Psal. 49. 7.* This is a work that he must *let alone for ever.*

It must be the Son of God only, that must be the *Sacrifice*, *g* or else there could be no satisfaction; his blood the *g* *price*, or else nothing bought; his life the ransom, or else *h* *nothing redeemed*. But this Sacrifice being offered, his blood being shed, his life laid down, then there was *κλυ- τος*, a full ransom; then there was *ἀντιλυσις*, a sufficient commutation; then there was *ἱλασμός*, a pacification made *i* for the sins of the whole world. His person was the only *m* *sacrifice* that God would accept: His blood the only *n* *price*, that God would esteem; His death the sole ransom, *o* that God would receive for the transgressors. *g* Eph. 5. 2. *h* 1 Cor. 6. 20. *i* 1 Tim. 2. 6. *k* Mat. 20. 28. *m* Rom. 3. 25. *n* 1 Joh. 2. 2. *o* 1 Pet. 2. 24. *p* 1 Pet. 1. 19. *q* Heb. 9. 15.

3. *That this Sacrament was ordained for a continual remembrance.*

This was a favour that would never be forgotten; and that we should never forget it, he was pleased immediately

- ly before his death to ordain this Sacrament with this *Item*,
 Luk. 22. 19. *Do this in remembrance of me.* And the Apostle puts us in
 mind, that *So oft as we eat of this bread, and drink of this cup,*
 1 Cor. 11. 24. *we shew forth the Lords death.* For that is the first end.

1. *To be a remembrance of his death.*

Mat. 27.
 Mark 13.
 Luk. 22.
 Joh. 18.

For here we have Christ crucified before our eyes, represented lively before us as upon the Cross: While as the signs of his blessed body and blood being sundred the one of them from the other, the one is broken and the other poured out; remembring us how his sacred body was broken with the crown of thorns, the scourges, the nails, the spear: how out of his wounded hands, feet, head, and side there issued a stream of blood. This he intended by his institution that we should first remember. The other is.

2. *The benefits we receive thereby: viz. By his Death.*

- In his flesh, sin was condemned, which S. Paul calls *αἰτίαν*, τῆς ἁμαρτίας, S. John *ἁρτίαν*, the destroying, loosing, or taking away sin by the Sacrifice of himself once offered: which contains in it these particulars;
- a b Heb. 9. 26, 28. 1. c The remove of the guilt. *The blood of Jesus Christ purgeth us.*
 - c 1 Joh. 1. 7. 2. d The discharge from the sting. *There is no condemnation.*
 - d Rom. 8. 1. 3. e The weakning of the power. *The blood of Jesus Christ purgeth our consciences from dead works.*
 - e Heb. 9. 14. 4. f Reconciliation. *For we are by his blood reconciled to God.*
 - f Col. 1. 21, 22. 5. Eternal Redemption, Eph. 1. 7, 14.
 - 6. Liberty to enter heaven. *By the blood of Jesus Christ, we may be bold to enter the holy place, by a new and living way, which is his flesh,* Heb. 10. 19, 20.

But of these I have spoken at large in the Creed.

Quest. What is the outward part or sign of the Lords Supper?

Ans.

Ans. *Bread and Wine which the Lord hath commanded to be received.*

Bread and Wine.

As in Baptism water was the outward element, so in this Sacrament is bread and wine; the bread represents his body, and the wine his blood: and there be who think, that our Saviour made choice of these, for that these, being the chief of our corporal preservatives, are fittest to set forth our spiritual nourishment: but this I neither affirm, nor deny. That which is more material to know, is the change of these, which is wholly Sacramental, not in substance, but in use. For they remain bread and wine still, such as before in nature: but consecrate and set apart to represent our Saviours Passion, and exhibit and seal to a worthy receiver the benefits of that Passion.

Great Disputes there are how Christ is in the Sacrament. Some conceive, that for his presence there, it is necessary that Christ be incorporated with the Sacramental elements. Others, that the bread and wine are changed into his very body. Others, who deny the substantial change, yet acknowledge his presence, express their meaning in different terms, thus: Corporally and substantially say some; Sacramentally, say other; Typically and figuratively, say a third; Spiritually, say a fourth; Really, say the last.

Mr. Hookers judgment to me in this difference of opinions seems very pious, that since that all are agreed that Christ is there, and seals his promises to a worthy receiver, and the question is only *de modo*, of the manner how he is there, that disputes and debates, enemies to piety, and abatements to devotion, be suffered to take their rest, &c. What these elements are in themselves it skills not: it is enough that to me, who take them, they are the body and blood of Christ: His promise in witness hereof sufficeth, his word he knoweth which way to accomplish; Why should any cogitation possess the mind of a faithful Communicant, but this? O my God, thou art true! O my soul thou art happy; Yet

Consubstan.
Transubstan.

Eccel. pol. lib. 9,
sect. 57.

Yet I will venture to bring my pitcher, and try if that cool water may not allay the flame. My intention is to put the fairest interpretation upon different expressions, and so reconcile exasperated brethren.

That the Sacrament is in the predicament of Relation, will be, I doubt not, easily granted me; and under that logical notion, I would thus define the Eucharist.

The Eucharist is a Sacrament instituted by Christ under the elements of bread and wine, to represent, exhibit, and seal the Passion of Christ and the benefits thereof to a worthy communicant. In which definition we meet with all those things that are necessary to set forth the nature of a Relation. Which are two: The *Material* part, is the subject, or the opposite, in which the *Relatum* and *Correlatum* do exist. The *Formal* part consists in *Fundamento & Termino*. The foundation shall supply the place of the efficient cause. The *Terminus*, the end, in absolute Accidents. To apply this.

1. The *Material* part here is the bread and wine.
2. The *Relatum*, that respect Christs body hath to the bread: and the *Correlatum*, that respect that the bread again hath to Christs body.
3. The foundation is the institution of Christ; for naturally these elements signifie it not, Christ was the efficient cause or the author of it. The Relation is from him.
4. The *Terminus* or end is evident, to represent, exhibit, seal, &c.

And thus all the words used by Divines in the explication of this mystery may receive a candid interpretation, except that of *Rome*.

1. That Christ is in the Sacrament corporally, Substantially, and perhaps Consubstantially may have a respect to the subject or *Suppositum* of the *Relatum* and *Correlatum*, their meaning being no more than that he is there under the forms of bread and wine, not changed in substance, but in use; as it is in other Relations: As for example, betwixt a father and son: who

who though they relate to each other, yet they remain two distinct substances, and the same they were.

2. Sacramentally, will point out the Foundation or efficient cause: for therefore it is a Sacrament, because Christ ordained it, and appointed the signs to have this Relation.
3. Typically and figuratively, will direct us to the first end, which is to Represent, but this is not *finis ultimus*.
4. Spiritually will put us in mind of the second end, which is to exhibit; for to the soul and spirit the grace is exhibited, not to the body.
5. Really, puts us in mind of the last end, to Seal: and such a real presence must be admitted, or else the Communicant receives nothing.

Christ is said to be present four manner of ways.

1. Divinely, as God, and so he is present in all places, *Psal. 139. 7. Whither shall I flee from thy presence? I the Lord fill Heaven and earth, Jer. 23. 24.*

2. Spiritually, and so he is present in the heart of true believers, *Eph. 3. 17. Christ dwells in our hearts by faith.*

3. Sacramentally, and so is he present in the Sacrament, because he hath ordained the Sacrament to represent, and communicate Christ's death unto us, *1 Cor. 10. 16, 17. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communication of the blood of Christ? &c.*

4. Corporally; so present in *Judea* in the days of his flesh.

And as the word presence, so the word really, is diversly taken: for sometimes,

1. It is opposed to that which is feigned, and is but imaginary, and imports as much as *Truly*.

2. It is opposed to that which is meerly figurative, and barely representative, and imports as much as *effectually*.

3. It is opposed to that which is spiritual, and imports as much as *Corporally* or *Bodily*.

We then believe Christ to be present in the Eucharist divinely after a special manner, Spiritually in the hearts of the Communicants, Sacramentally or relatively in the elements. And this presence of his is *real*, in the two former acceptations of *real*; but not in the last, for he is *truly* and *effectually* there present, though not *corporally*, *bodily*, *carnally*, *locally*.

As for the Papists Transubstantiation, it can have no place at all, except in *supposito* or *materiali*. And it is most absurd to say, that the *suppositum Relati* is turned into the *suppositum Correlati*. In other Relations it is not, and why then in this? We know that the Father becomes not the Identical substance of the son, nor the son of the father, the husband of the wife, nor the wife of the husband. They remain distinct substances as before. Adde to this, that this fiction of Transubstantiation, besides that it contradicts the confessed Rules of Arts and Reason, clearly takes away the Relation, and the Essence of a Sacrament. For upon this corporal change, what becomes of the sign? for if this were true, it were the very thing signified, and then the *Signum* and *Signatum* would be all one; which overthrows the definition.

I am of opinion, that it was the hard hap of the Church of Rome to rise up in the defence of this error: Should the Protestants have done it, they would have hissed them out of the School; and now their learned Jesuits are obstinate in it, to maintain their Churches infallibility. And the ground of my conjecture is that counsel, which Cardinal Carpi gave the Pope, enclining to have granted what was then desired by some Princes and States; as Service in the vulgar tongue, the marriages of Priests, and the Communion in both kinds: The sum whereof was, though these things desired, were in themselves matters of no great moment, yet upon the concession of them the Hereticks would infer, that the Chair had erred in her injunctions and constitutions, and then all was gone.

It is not Religion then, but Policy that upholds it, together with the child that is descended from it, the *Chimera* of

of *Thomas* brain, Concomitancy : upon which fancy they mutilate this Sacrament, and deny the cup to the people. Against which Sacrilege, our Catechism protests in the following words.

2. Which the Lord hath commanded to be received.

His command is extant, *Drink ye all of this*, and *Mark* 14. *Mar.* 26. 27. *They all drank of it.* As the Lord asked the King of Tyre in derision, *Art thou wiser than Daniel?* So may we ask them, Are ye wiser than Christ, will you dare to amend his institution? And if they reply, that all there were Priests, I rejoyne;

1. That it rests upon them to prove it, for it may be well doubted, whether they were so or no as yet. For the Apostles had the promise only of the Keys. *Dabo tibi claves Cæli.* *Mar.* 16. 19. To thee will I give the Keys; in the future tense. Actually they were not given, till they had their mission and commission, *Job.* 20, 21, 22, 23. which was after the Institution. It is probable then they were not the Fathers of the Clergy before.

2. That by this argument the bread may as well be taken away from all, but disciples too; and so the Laity should have no right to any part of the Sacrament.

3. That the practice of the ancient Church, which is the best rule to explicate any such difficulty, is a clear proof that the cup belongs to the people. For they then received it.

The testimonies are infinite for it. But I shall content myself with that plain confession, which is extant in the Council of *Constance* to their eternal shame.

a And [we decree also] in like manner, that though in the primitive Church this Sacrament was received by the

Vid. Chemnic. examen Concil. Trid. sess. 5. Can. 1, 2, 3. Conc. Const. sess. 13. a Et similiter, quod licet in primitiva Ecclesia hujusmodi Sacramentum reciperetur à fidelibus sub utraq; Specie; tamen hæc consuetudo ad evitandum aliqua pericula & scandala, est rationabiliter introducta, quod à conscientibus, sub utraq; Specie, & laicis tantummodo sub una Specie suscipiatur, &c.

faithful under both kinds; yet this custom, to avoid some dangers and scandals, is reasonably introduced, that it should be received by the Priests in both kinds, and by the Laicks only in one kind, &c.

They confess the primitive Church received in both kinds; yet to avoid I know not what scandals, they decree otherwise, and in the same act brand with the name of heresie those who oppose their determination. And command under the pain of Excommunication, that no Priest presume to administer the Sacrament to the people under the *species* of bread and wine.

De conf. dist. 2. cap.

b Comperimus quod quidam sumpta tantummodo corporis sacri portione, à calice sacri cruoris abstineant: Qui (proculdubio, quoniam nescio qua superstitione docentur, astricti) aut integra Sacramenta percipiant, aut ab integris arceantur, quod divisio unius ejusdemque mysterii sine grandi non sit sacrilegio. So Gelasius.

Conc. Trident. Sess. 5. Can. 1.

c Si quis dixerit ex Dei præcepto vel de necessitate salutis esse, omnes & singulis Christi fideles, utramque Speciem Eucharistia sumere debere, Anathema sit.

4. They should do well to reconcile those two Decrees, the first of their Pope *Gelasius*. The other of their late Council of *Trent*. *Gelasius* the Pope saith, *b* We find, that some, a portion only of the sacred Body being taken, do abstain from the Chalice of the sacred Blood. Who (without doubt, because I know not by what superstition being taught they are obliged) let them either receive the entire Sacrament, or be kept from the whole, because the division of one, and the same mystery cannot be without sacrilege.

But the Fathers of *Trent* are of another mind, and they magisterially decree:

c If any man shall say, that all and every faithful Christian, by the precept of God, or necessity of Salvation, ought to receive both *species* of the Eucharist, let him be *Anathema*.

In this contrariety, which way, I pray, should the poor people turn? The Pope saith plainly, that it is superstition to conceive the receipt of the bread sufficient, and sacrilege to divide the mystery; and commands that men abstain from both, or receive both together. The Council

cil curse all those, that say, There is a precept of God to receive in both kinds, or that it is necessary to Salvation : If you follow the Council, the Pope shall condemn you ; if you follow the Pope, the Council hath anathematiz'd you. The people can rest themselves upon nothing but Christs command, *Drink you all of this*, when those that lead them are thus divided.

5. Lastly, This mutilation takes away one of the principal ends of this Sacrament : *viz.* The commemoration of Christs passion, for to have the blood within the body is no sign that it was shed, the pouring forth of the wine doth it far more to the life. Whereas our Saviour ordained both elements to be distributed severally : that it might not only be preached to our ears, but represented to our eyes, how his blessed body and blood were separated for our sins.

Quest. What is the inward part, or thing signified ?

Answ. *The body and blood of Christ, which are verily and indeed taken and received by the faithful in the Lords Supper.*

Of this answer there be two parts :

1. That the *body and blood of Christ* are signified by those signs.

2. *That the body and blood of Christ, are verily and indeed taken and received by the faithful in the Lords Supper.*

1. The first is out of question, and shewed sufficiently before : yet both must be conceived with his proper Attribute. The body with crucifixion. The blood with effusion. The *Body* as given for us, *Luke* 22. 19. The *Blood*, as shed for us, *Mat.* 26. 28. Without which reflexion they will have little comfort and heart in them. Christs flesh and blood are the true cause of eternal life, which yet they are not by the bare force of their own substance, but through the dignity and worth of his person, which offered them up by way of Sacrifice, for the life of the whole world ; of which Sacrifice we have in this Sacrament a lively representation and memorial.

2. *That*

2. *That the body and blood of Christ are verily and indeed taken and received by the Faithful.*

Eph. 5. 23,
30, 32.

1 Cor. 10. 16,
17.

But this is not all, for what is here represented, is verily and indeed taken and received. It is on all hands confessed, that in this Sacrament there is a true and real participation of Christ, who thereby imparts himself, even his whole entire person, as a mystical head, unto every soul that receives him, and that every receiver doth thereby incorporate, and unite himself to Christ as a mystical member of him, and of them also, whom he acknowledgeth to be his own. This though mystically, yet it is truly; though invisibly, yet it is really done. Of this St. Paul assures us: *The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not ~~not~~ ^{the} communion, or rather, Communication, of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the Communion of the body of Christ?* 'Tis as if the Apostle had said, Know you not this, that the breaking, taking, eating this bread, the pouring forth, taking and drinking this wine, is the real Communication of the body and blood of Christ to you? A question figured by a Negative is equivalent to a quick affirmative. Is it not? Is somewhat more than, It is. This then the Apostle intends to assert, and assure a worthy Communicant, that, as verily as he eats the bread with his mouth, and takes down the wine, so verily God in Heaven bestows on him, and communicates unto him the body and blood of his Saviour, and the benefits of that body and blood, which in two words are Pardon and Grace.

But because the Sacrament in it self being a corruptible and earthly substance must needs be thought an unlikely instrument to work so admirable effects in man, we altogether are to rest upon the strength of his glorious power and goodness, who is able, and will bring to pass, that the bread and wine which he giveth us shall be truly the thing he promiseth. This is an act of faith, which is required in every one that really means to partake of the benefit; and therefore the Catechism warily adds, that it must be taken and received.

3. By

3. By the Faithful.

Christ's death in the Sacrament is offered to all, but it is effectual only to believers; *Joh. 1. 12. As many as received him, to them he gave power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe in his Name.* Were the oral or outward manducation only necessary, then no question the presenting ourselves only at his Table, the taking and eating were sufficient: but when it is a *Spiritual* banquet, and *Sacramental* nourishment, that we are to receive there; if ever we intend to make it food of life, it must be digested by Faith. Through Faith it was the Fathers did *agere* *seculum* salute with reverence, and embrace the promises; and the same way we are to have comfort by them. The reason is, because whatsoever Christ hath done already, or hath promised hereafter to do for us, are to us as never done, as never to be done, till we believe them: that which gives them a being, and makes them present and existent to us, is our Faith: as is shewed in the beginning of this Exposition when I spoke of Faith.

Heb. 11. 13.

Heb. 11. 1.

In the midst of that Sermon our Saviour preached at *Capernaum*, our Saviour delivers this position, *Joh. 6. 57. Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that believeth in me hath everlasting life.* Then it follows, *That he was the bread that came down from Heaven, vers. 50. That this bread was his flesh, vers. 51.* And then, *vers. 53.* he adds with a strong asseveration, *Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, you have no life in you.*

With which assertion many of his Disciples were offended, and murmured at it. For satisfaction then, he tells them, *vers. 63. It is the Spirit quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.* They had not a literal, they had a Spiritual sense; and he that would make them life unto him, must so understand them, believe that he was that heavenly Manna; and by Faith eat his flesh, and drink his blood; for otherwise they would be of no effect, as appears by the close, *vers. 64. There are some of you that believe not: believe not*

not that I am the bread of life, believe not that I am the bread that came down from Heaven, believe not that the bread I will give is my flesh : and neither this bread, nor this my flesh can quicken such a man, because of his unbelief. Evident then it is, that the body and blood of Christ are taken and received to effect, only by the faithful.

Farther yet, our Saviour at the institution of this Sacrament acquaints us, *This is my body, which is given for you, this is my blood, which is shed for you.* Not simply his body, nor simply his blood, but given and shed ; not that only, but for you, and many more. This gift and effusion are Acts done and past many years since, and that the Son of God cloathed with the flesh of man, should be so prodigal of his blood, and free and merciful in his gift, is beyond the apprehension of man, and the reach of reason. What is it then, that may perswade us that such a thing so many years ago was done ; that so merciful, so wonderful a kindness was done for men in general, that were ungodly, enemies, sinners ; for us in particular, that were of these ungodly enemies, and as great and obstinate as any sinners : except our Faith ? The Scriptures have fully expressed it, truth hath spoken it, and therefore we believe it.

Which strange, unexpected, unheard of mercy, it pleased him to represent, exhibit and secure to us by his institution of this Sacrament, and to command, that it be continued in his Church *in perpetuam rei memoriam*, to be an eternal memorial of his good will. To all which, Faith alone can give life and an interest. For this we believe too, and in confidence thereof approach and take this body and this blood, being assured that by these symbols we receive all Christ. Out of which it is as clear as the Sun, that this Sacrament is received by, and only by the faithful. Unbelievers may receive *panem Domini*, the bread of the Lord : Believers only *panem Dominum*, that Bread which is the Lord.

Angst.

Q. What are the Benefits, wherof we are partakers thereby?

Ans. *The strengthening and refreshing our souls by the body and blood of Christ, as our bodies are by the bread and wine.*

Two great Benefits there are, which a worthy Communicant

nicant receives from the Sacrament, 1. Strength, 2. Refreshing. To expresse which, it was ordained in those elements which have those effects in the life of man.

1. The first is bread, that serves to strengthen the body, *Psal. 104. 15.* being indeed the staff of life, which being taken out of our hand, the body fails, and falls, decays, pines away, and win- dlers to nothing.

2. The other is wine, that is of great use to cheer the heart and make it glad, and this is therefore will'd to be administred to those that mourn, and are oppress'd with grief; it is also good against thirst, it searcheth and cleanseth wounds, and helps infirmities. Strength is from bread. Cheerfulness and refreshing from wine.

Luc. 10. 34.

In these it pleased our Saviour to institute this holy Sa- crament, to shew that the same effect is wrought in the in- ner man by the holy mysteries, that is in the outward by these elements. That here our heart is established by grace, and our souls with strength, and our conscience made light and cheerful that it faint not, but evermore rejoyce in his holy comfort. To insist on these a little.

1. *Strengthening.*

O taste and see how gracious the Lord is: for to say, Receive my body, is as if he had said, Receive the holy Ghost, that is, the graces of the holy Ghost. And this grace to the soul, is what bread that staff of life is to the body, which I shall set down in the words of that pious and prudent Di- vine learned Doctor *Hammond*. We can do nothing that is *Prafr. c. 1.* in order to spiritual life, but fall into sin, custom of sin, which is the putrefaction of the soul, and so to eternal death, without grace: For having forfeited that stock that God gave us in Paradise, we have none of this kind left, but what Christ by his death purchased for us: by that great dear bargain there is come into the Church a new stock and staple of Grace, and strength for every one that shall ask it importunately, receive it watchfully, and make use of it diligently: *For to every one that hath it shall be gi- ven;* given in that measure, which, though it will not ena-
D d ble

ble any man, to live without sinning, yet it will enable him to resist sin, and to serve God in so holy and righteous a way with a sincere heart, and so to persevere in it, that he will accept it.

Now the conduit in this grace is the Sacrament; for by it Christ intended it should be conveyed to us; by it we are fortified against the assaults of Satan, in the power of Christs death we fight and conquer: For who, having the death of Christ for sin, lively presented unto him, as it is here, will yield basely to that sin, that crucified his Saviour? Rather he will often put on his armour, despise his enemy, stand up, and fight till he hath destroyed him. To encourage him against the attempts and blows of his adversary, he hath from hence security, *Non inermes & nudi relinquitur, sed protectione sanguinis & corporis Christi munimur.* We are not left naked and unarm'd, but we are wall'd about with the protection of the body and blood of Christ, so that now, *Tanquam leones ignem spirantes, ab illa mensa recedimus facti diabolo terribiles,* they are the words of *Chrysostom*, Triumphant upon this strength, we depart from this Table as Lions breathing out fire, and are become terrible to the devil himself; For finding the power of Christ within us, he will be afraid to assault us.

Every worthy receiver hath washed his soul in the blood of the Lamb, and none but prophane men will that day pollute it. For a few hours you shall see men, *Holy, cautelous, devout, retired, not doing their own ways, not finding their own pleasure, nor speaking their own words.* Ask the reason, and the answer is ready, they have been at the Communion. Evident then it is, that this strength of grace was received from thence. Did then but the like sad and pious thoughts possess mens souls for the future, that doth upon that day; would they but continue and cooperate with that grace they then received, and confess the force of it by the effects, it could not be doubted, but their whole life would be more holy, their ways more righteous, they would never crucifie Christ again, who hath given them power, that they no more crucifie him, and to which if they

Cyprian. Epist.
54.

Ad pop. Antioch.
Hom. 61.

Rev. 6. 14.

Ila. 58. 13.

they be not wanting they shall no more crucifie him : For what merit, force, virtue soever there is in his sacrificed body and blood, we freely, fully and wholly have it imparted by this Sacrament.

Now if it be demanded, how so small a piece of bread, or a spoonful of wine can produce this effect ; The answer is ealie, that it proceeds not from the Elements, but from the will and power of Christ, who ordained these to be means and instruments for that end. They remain in substance what they were ; but in relation to him are more. It is spiritual bread, and spiritual wine, so called, not so much because spiritually received, but because being so received, it causes us to receive the Spirit, and *by the power of the Spirit*, Phil. 4. 13. *a man may be enabled to do all things.*

2. Refreshing.

The Sacrament is a corroborative, and gives strength, but that is not the sole benefit, it is a Refreshing also, as is well signified by wine, by which he that pants for thirst hath his inward flame quenched ; by which he that hath any indisposition of body, hath his infirmity searched, and eased. Both may be refreshed, cheered, gladdened and cured by it.

A man, scorch'd with the sense of Gods wrath, is a thirsty soul ; a conscience, oppressed with the weight of sin, feels truly the burden of it ; a soul wounded with the darts of sin, is the wounded man, and is sensible of the *stink and* *captivity, because of his foolishness* : Every man is full of infirmities and weakneses, and is in pain for them. All these are broken-hearted, faint, disquieted, and have a desire to be refreshed. Now, saith our Saviour, *Come unto me all ye that are weary and heavy laden, and I will refresh you.* His free pardon and remission, his speaking peace to the unquiet conscience, his saying, *Thy sins are forgiven thee*, to the heavy loaden and sin-sick-wounded soul, is the greatest refreshment, the joyfullest tidings, the chearfullest cordial that can be administred.

Psal. 42. 1, 2.

Psal. 38. 4.

Luc. 10. 30.

Psal. 38. 5.

Luc. 4. 18.

Mat. 11. 28.

Rom. 3. 24.

Isa. 57. 19.

Luc. 7. 47, 48.

And this he is pleased to administer in this cup, in which is this cheerful wine, *His blood, which was shed for many, for the remission of sins*, Mat. 26. 28. Bring the scorched and thirsty soul to this fountain, and it will refresh and cool his heat : Bring the burdened conscience to this blood, and it will unload him : Bring the wounded man to this wine, and it will search and cure his sores : all infirm sinners to this cup, and it will refresh them. In this blood there is an Artery by which the vital Spirit is convey'd, that will quicken, revive, and cheer up any fainting and dying soul.

'Tis not without reason that the wise Composers of our Liturgy have inserted those choice Texts at the Communion, and commended them with this Preface. Hear what comfortable words our *Saviour Christ* saith to all that turn to him.

Mat. 11. 28.
Joh 3. 16.

Come unto me all ye, that travel and are heavy laden, and I will refresh you. So God loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, to the end that all that believe in him, should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Hear also what S. Paul saith.

1 Tim. 1. 15.

This is a true saying, and worthy of all men to be received, that Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners.

Hear also what S. John saith.

If any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous, and he is the propitiation for our sins.

Here then is the right place for *Sursum corda*, Lift up your hearts. A form so ancient, and so usual in most Liturgies. Sacerd. *Sancti Jacob. Liturg. Attollamus mentem & corda.* Let us lift up our mind and heart. Pop. *Dignum & justum est. Sac. Vere dignum & justum est.* It is meet and right. *Basilii Litur. Sursum sint mentes.* Let your minds be above.

Biblioth. patr.
um, Tom. 4.

Pop. *Sunt ad Dominum.* They are to the Lord.

Sac. *Gratias agamus.* Let us give thanks.

Moza-Pop. *Dignum & justum est. Sac. Æquum certe & justum. rabum. Sac. Aurea ad Dominum. R. Habemus ad Dominum.*

Sac. *Sursum corda. R. Levemus ad Dominum.*

Chor. *Dignum & justum est. S. Dignum & justum est.*

Cypr,

Cyp. de orat. Dominica. Sursum corda. Habemus ad Dominum.
 And Pammelius in his Notes on the place, gives in divers other Testimonies for this form in use at the Sacrament. We have then trod in the steps of the Ancient, and with them suffered it to stand in its proper place.

For if so kind a call: *Come unto me*: if the manifestation of so great love: if a truth so greatly beneficial: if Jesus that came into the world to save sinners, to be an Advocate, to be a propitiation for sins, cannot raise the heart, cannot refresh the Spirit of a weary and heavy laden soul and conscience, nothing will.

It is therefore very meet and right, and our bounden duty to give thanks to God, that he so loved the world, that he sent his Son into the world, that who so believes in him, should not perish, but have everlasting life; and it is again as meet and right, and our bounden duty to give thanks to our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, that he would give his body to be crucified, and his blood to be shed for us, and in a Sacrament to represent, and exhibit the merit thereof unto us.

A Sacrament from which we receive strength and refreshing: strength to encounter sin: and refreshing, when oppressed by sin: ease and remission from the condemnation, and freedom and liberty from the dominion. In two words the benefits are Sanctification and Justification. For upon the grant of the pardon and remission (without which there can be no refreshing) we are justified, and upon the gift of this strength we are sanctified: we arise from villany to vertue, from death to life, from impurity to sanctity; and if we improve this power of Grace, and proceed to purifie our selves by it, it will never leave us, nor forsake us, till it hath brought us to glory. Rom. 8. 2.

Quest. What is required of them which come to the Lords Supper?

Answ. To examine themselves, whether

1. They repent them truly of their former sins, stedfastly purposing to lead a new life.
2. Have a lively faith in Gods mercy through Christ.

3. With

3. *With a thankful remembrance of his death.*
4. *And be in charity with all men.*

They are to Examine.

The duty here enjoyned is examination, not enjoyned by the Church, but by *S. Paul*, 1 Cor. 11. 28. *Let a man Examine himself, and so let him eat of this bread, and drink of this cup.* The Apostles word is *δοκιμαζέτω*, let him prove, try, bring himself to the test and touch; which notes a diligent and exact enquiry, such as Lapidaries and Goldsmiths use, to find out true metal from counterfeit, good from bad.

And this *Examination* is necessary, so that it is not in our choice to do it, or to leave it undone. *S. Pauls* illative proves it. *Let a man examine himself, Therefore.* If he mean not to be in the case of the *Corinthians* to whom he writes, who for their irreverent, sinful, and disorderly approach were unworthy Communicants, and guilty of the body and blood of Christ, he must examine. Now the things about which he is to enquire are these.

1 Cor. 11. 29.

1. *Repentance.*

Both parts of this duty are here set down :

1. A sense, a sorrow, a confession of our former sin.
2. A stedfast purpose and resolution to lead a new life.

Ezek. 16. 6.
Psal. 5. 5.
Rev. 21. 27.
Rom. 6. 23.
Rom. 7. 24.

1. Sin defiles our persons, this pollution makes us odious in the eyes of God, excludes from Heaven, brings calamity upon us, and death both temporal, and eternal : of which, till a man be truly sensible, he will never be a true Penitent.

2. But upon a true conviction by his conscience, that this is his miserable condition, his soul will be humbled, sorrowful and contrite, cast down, and grieved, not only that he hath incurr'd this danger (for that is but Attrition) but heavy and sad, that he provoked so good a God, so compassionate a Father, so gracious a Redeemer, so blessed a Sanctifier; and this is truly Contrition.

3. And

3. And upon this compunction and contrition, he will fall to confess and acknowledge his sin, in the humblest manner. He will be his own accuser, and draw a full indictment against himself: Enumerate to God all his known sins, and aggravate them against himself with all the heightening circumstances: As for those he knows not, he will beg pardon in some such form. *O cleanse thou me from my secret faults. Lord, be merciful to me a sinner.* Psal. 19. 12. Luke 18. 13.

4. But the penitents work is not yet done, the greatest is yet behind, which is a *stedfast purpose and resolution to lead a new life.*

1. This must certainly be in a Communicant, for he that brings to this holy Table a purpose, and intent to continue in his sin, comes in his sin somewhat like *Judas*, that came and received, and yet continued his purpose to betray his Master. Before then we approach, there must be a vow of a new life, an abjuration of all our former evil ways, and a full and stedfast resolution against them. Joh. 13. 30.

2. And this resolution must be brought to act, for it is not enough to resolve to do good, but we must be good, to purpose to lead a new life, but we must lead a new life, and though that through ignorance, infirmity, sudden surreption, or violence of Temptation the same sins steal upon us, yet we must humble our selves, confess them, be contrite and beg pardon for them, resist and fight against them, and diligently labour that they return no more, at least that they reign not, which will never be, so long as we mortifie them. Tit. 2. 12. 1 Tim. 6. 12. 2 Tim. 4. 7. Eph. 6. 10, ad 19.

2. Faith.

The next thing that a Communicant is to examine himself of, is his faith: *Whether he hath a lively faith in Gods mercy through Christ.*

Faith.

1. Faith is requisite, because as is proved before, *The body and blood of Christ are verily and indeed taken and received*

ceived by the faithful, and only by the faithful.

A lively Faith.

- Gal. 5. 6. 2. This faith must have life in it, for it must be a *lively faith*, which if it be, it will be doing, for there is no life without action, it will shew it self in those parts, where our life doth appear, at the heart, tongue and hand. A dead faith it is, that moves not at these parts, and is never consummate by love.
- 1 Cor. 13.

In Gods Mercy.

3. This faith for the object hath *Gods mercy*, upon that it reflects as the fountain, whence his revelations have proceeded, in which his Covenant for mans Redemption is established, his promises to penitent believing sinners are made. For if ye shall enquire the reason of so much goodness, no other can be given, but the riches of mercy. *Thou Lord hast done it, for even so it pleased thee. The zeal of the Lord of hosts hath done this. So he loved.* No more can be said.
- Ephes. 2. 7.
Luke 12. 32.
Isa. 9. 7.
Joh. 3. 16.

Through Christ.

4. But now if you enquire, how his mercy became ours, The answer is easie, it was *Through Christ*. *He of God is made unto us wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, redemption.* When the holy Ghost descended upon him, a voice testified from Heaven, *This is my beloved Son in whom (complacui) I am well pleased*: pleased with him, and pleased with us for his sake. By him we are predestinated, by him adopted, in this beloved accepted, In him redeemed, and according to the riches of his grace we have obtained remission of sin, and through him at last we shall be glorified.
- 1 Cor. 1. 30.
Mat. 3. 17.
Eph. 1. 5, 6, 7.
Joh. 14. 3.
Rom. 8. 18.

3. *Thankfulness.*

Which benefits because we receive from the Cross, therefore to this our faith there must be joyned a thankful remembrance of his death.

A Remembrance.

1. A remembrance of it; the Sacrament was ordained for that end: On all hands it is agreed, that it is a Sacrifice of commemoration; not to remember then how Christ died for us, were to frustrate the chief end of the institution.

A Thankful Remembrance.

But barely to remember it, will not suffice: It must be a *Thankful remembrance*. Now he who will be a thankful man, must do two things:

1. He must recount, declare, and publish, what it is that hath been done for him, *Psal. 66. 14.* The mercy and grace would not be kept close, and concealed, but at large set out in the Congregation, and to all posterity: at this time then we are to commemorate the goodness of God in all, but especially his great bounty in giving his Son to dye for us. Luc. 2. 17.
Psal. 96. 3, 10.

2. He is bound to lift up his heart and voice, and praise God, chanting forth that *Χαρισμὸν*, the Anthem of the Seraphims theretore, *i. e.* for the redemption of the World by the death and passion of our Saviour Christ, and for the institution of these holy mysteries as continual pledges of his love, and remembrances of his death. [With Angels and Archangels, and with all the company of Heaven, we laud and magnifie thy glorious Name, evermore praising thee, and saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God of Hosts, Heaven and Earth are full of thy Glory: Glory be to thee, O Lord most High.] See *Act. 2. 46, 47.*

4. Charity.

Hitherto a Communicant hath been directed to try and search his heart whether it stands right to God. But now he must descend, and examine how it stands to man. For God will not have him come and offer a gift upon his Altar, if his heart be *leavened with envy, malice, and uncharita-* Mat. 5. 23.
bleness.

As this Sacrament seals up the Communion of the members with the head, so it seals up the Communion of the members one with another. The Lord ordained these elements of such things, that being many in themselves, yet of many become one: Bread is made of many grains of wheat; wine of many grapes; and yet the meal of those divers grains, are moulded up into one loaf, and the wine of those several berries are pressed into one cup: to teach us, that all the Communicants at this holy Table, how many soever there be, ought to agree together in *one*, like members of *one body*: as having *one Father, one Faith, one Baptism, one*

Eph. 4. 4, 5, 6. *Inheritance*, as parts quickned by *one* and the same Spirit, brethren to be saved by *one* and the same Christ.

Now this love and charity will be conspicuous by two effects. 1. In giving. 2. And in forgiving.

1. In giving to, and relieving the necessities of our poorer brethren. Hard it is for any man to shew that the Sacrament in the Primitive Church was administered without an Offertory. Mention is made of the liberality and charity expressed at their breaking of bread. And 1 Cor. 16. 2. A command there is, that upon the *first day of the week* (a day appointed for the Sacrifice) *every man should set apart somewhat for the use of the poor*. All Liturgies of the Church record it, and ours intends it, and speaks for it, in those sentences that persuade it, and in the subsequent prayer, where we desire of God *to accept our alms*.

Acts 2. 46.

Mat. 5. 23.

2. The second act of charity is Forgiving, for which we have our Saviours precept. His example, *Father, forgive them*. The danger, if it be not done, Our prayers not accepted, our sins retained, our pardon never sealed. *For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will forgive you: But if you forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses*. See Mt. 18. ver. 23. to the end.

Mat. 6. 14, 15

The Analysis of the exhortation before the Communion.

To help the weaker capacities in this necessary work, I suppose it may be worth labour to analyse, and reduce to

to these heads that grave Exhortation, which the wise Composers of the *Liturgie* have prefixed before the *Communion*: which begins thus:

Dearly beloved in the Lord, ye that mind to come to the holy Communion of the body and blood of our Saviour Christ, must consider what S. Paul writes to the Corinthians.

How he exhorts all persons diligently to try and examine themselves before they presume to eat of that Bread, and drink of that Cup.

The Duty.

1. In which words the Ministers mind Communicants of their duty, which is a diligent tryal and examination.

2. And that they may the easilier perswade them to this; they produce a double reason

1. From the benefit.
2. From the danger and punishment.

1. From the benefit to a worthy Receiver.

1. *For as the benefit is great, if with a true penitent heart and lively faith, we receive that holy Sacrament.*

For then we spiritually eat the flesh of Christ, and drink his blood; then we dwell in Christ, and Christ in us; we be one with Christ, and Christ with us.

2. *From the danger and punishment to an unworthy Receiver.*

The Danger.

So is the danger great, if we receive the same unworthily: for then,

1. *We be guilty of the body and blood of Christ our Saviour.*
2. *We eat and drink our own damnation, not considering the Lords body.*

And Punishment, or Consequent.

3. *We kindle Gods wrath against us.*
4. *We provoke him to plague us with divers diseases, and sundry kinds of death.*

3. Upon which important reasons they dehorte all

Scandalous and notorious sinners (meaning such who intend to persist in those sins) that they abstain.

Exhortation.

Therefore if any of you be a blasphemer of God, a hinderer or slanderer of his word, an adulterer, or be in malice or envy, or in any other grievous crime, bewail your sins, and come not to this holy Table : Adding this weighty reason (which is but a repetition of the former danger and punishment.) Lest after the taking of this holy Sacrament, the Devil enter into you, as he entered in Judas, and fill you full of all iniquities, and bring you to destruction of body and soul.

4. Then follows an advice how Communicants must prepare themselves.

1. To Judge.

1. *Judge therefore your selves brethren, that you be not judged of the Lord.* That they erect a Court in their own consciences, accuse, censure, arraign, and condemn themselves for their sins, and so prevent that condemnatory sentence, which otherwise the Lord will pronounce upon them.

2. To Repentance, both parts.

2. *Repent you truly of your sins past : Amend your lives.*

3. Faith.

3. *Have a lively and stedfast Faith in Christ our Saviour.*

4. Charity.

4. *Be in perfect Charity with all men : So shall you be meet partakers of these holy mysteries.*

5. Thankfulness.

5. *And above all things, you must give humble and hearty thanks to God the Father, the Son, and the holy Ghost.*

The

The Cause.

For the Redemption of the World, by the death and passion of our Saviour Christ, God and Man.

Both parts of Thankfulness { 1. Annunciation.
2. Praise.

The commemoration or annunciation of Gods goodness to us.

1. *Who did humble himself, even to the death upon the Cross for us miserable sinners, which lay in darkness and the shadow of death.* 2. *That he might make us the children of God.* 3. *And exalt us to everlasting life.*

4. *And to the end we should always remember the exceeding great love of our Master, and only Saviour Jesus Christ thus dying for us, and the innumerable benefits which by his precious blood-shedding, he hath obtained to us.*

He hath instituted and ordained holy mysteries, as pledges of his love, and continual remembrance of his death, to our great and endless comfort.

The Doxology, Acclamation or Hymn.

2. *To him therefore with the Father, and the holy Ghost, let us give (as we are most bounden) continual thanks;*

Submitting our selves to his holy will and pleasure, and studying to serve him in true holiness and righteousness all the days of our life. Amen.

The Postscript.

Courteous Reader,

WHat is in this Explanation of the Creed succinctly and positively delivered, is more fully and amply expounded by the Author in a large Book of Sermons extant upon every Article; for which he hath chosen apt Texts. If therefore any man desire a more ample information about those Mysteries, he may, if he please, peruse that Book.

F I N I S.



Books lately Printed, and to be Sold by
William Grantham at the *Black Bear*
in *S. Pauls Church-yard.*

Quarto's.

William Lord Bishop of *Gloucester*, Entitled, (A plain and full Exposition of the Catechism of the Church of *England.*)

Edward Lord Bishop of *Norwich*, Entitled, (A Sermon preached before the Peers at *Westminster* the 7. Nov. being a day of solemn Humiliation for the continuing Pestilence.)

Nath. Hardy Dr. Entitled (Justice Triumphant, &c.) A Sermon preached the 5. of *Novemb.*

—Entitled, (The Pilgrims With) A Sermon preached at the Funeral of Mrs. *Anne Dudson.*

—Entitled, (A loud Call to great Mourning) A Sermon preached on the 30. *Jan.* 1661. before the Parliament.

—Entit. (Lamentation, Mourning and Woe) A Sermon preached the Lords-day after the dismal Fire in the City of *London.*

—Entit. (The Royal Common-wealths Man, &c.) A Sermon preached at the Funeral of Sir *Thomas Adams.*

T. B. Entit. (The general Inefficacy and Insincerity of a late or death-bed Repentance.

Adam Littleton Entit. (The Churches Peace asserted, &c.) A Sermon preached before the Right Honourable the Lord Mayor of *London* in *Guild-hall* Chappel.

Sam. Drake Dr. Entit. (ΘΕΟΤ' ΔΙΑΚΟΝΟΣ, &c.) A Sermon preached at the Assizes at *Tork*, 1669.

—Entit. (*Totum Homini*, &c.) A Sermon preached the 15. *March* at the Assizes in *Tork.*

Large

Large Octavo's.

Johanne Betto M. D. Entit. (*De Ortu & Natura Sanguinis.*)

Small Octavo's.

Thomas Elborow Entit. (The famous Epistles of *S. Polycarp* and *S. Ignatius* Disciples to the holy Evangelist and Apostle *S. John*; with the Epistle of *S. Barnabas*, &c.

S. C. Entit. (The chief Principles of the Christian Faith,) &c.

Large Twelves.

Thomas Mall { Entit. (Holy Living) A serious Exhortation thereunto, and choice Directions
And {
Theoph. Polwbeile { therein, &c.
